

BEHEMOTH  
THE  
HISTORY  
OF THE  
Civil Wars  
OF  
ENGLAND,

From the Year 1640, to 1660.

By T. H. of Malmesbury.

Purged from the Errours of former Editions.

*Tantum Religio potuit suadere Malorum.*

*Lucrēt. de Natur. Rer. Lib. I.*

*Placavi Sanguine Dens.* Hor. Serm. lib. II.  
*Satyr. 3.*

Printed in the Year 1680.

I

C

A.

as  
upon  
Me  
Pro  
of  
the  
com  
the  
tha  
you  
and  
we



THE  
HISTORY  
OF THE  
Civil Wars  
Of ENGLAND.

A. **I**F in time, as in Place, there were Degrees of High and Low; I verily believe that the highest of Time would be that which passeth betwixt 1640, and 1660. For he that thence, as from the *Devil's Mountain*, should have looked upon the World, and observed the Actions of Men, especially in *England*, might have had a Prospect of all kind of Injustice, and of all kinds of Folly that the World could afford; and how they were produced by their Hypocrisie and Self-conceit; whereof the one is double Iniquity, and the other double Folly.

B. I should be glad to behold the Prospect. You that have lived in that time, and in that part of your Age, wherein men used to see best into good and evil; I pray you set me (that could not see so well) upon the same Mountain, by the relation of

## The History of the

the actions you then saw, and of their causes, Pretensions, Justice, Order, Artifice and Events.

*A.* In the year 1640, the Government of *England* was Monarchical, and the King that reigned, *Charles* the I. of that name, holding the Sovereignty by Right of a Discant continued above 800 years; and from a much longer Discant King of *Scotland*; and from the Time of his Ancestors *Henry* the 2. King of *Ireland*: a Man that wanted no Vertue, either of Body or Mind, nor endeavour'd any thing more, than to discharge his Duty towards his God, in the well governing of his Subjects.

*B.* How could he then miscarry, having in every County so many Train'd-bands as would (put together) have made an Army of 60000 Men, and divers Magazines of Ammunition in Places fortified.

*A.* If those Souldiers had been (as they and all others of his Subjects ought to have been) at his Majesties Command, the Peace and Happiness of the Three Kingdoms had continued, as it was left by *K. James*; but the People were corrupted generally, and Disobedient Persons esteemed the best Patriots.

*B.* But sure, there were Men enough, besides those that were ill-affected, to have made an Army sufficient for to have kept the People from uniting into a Body able to oppose him.

*A.* Truly, if the King had had Money, I think he might have had Souldiers enough in *England*; for there were very few of the common People that cared much for either of the Causes, but would have taken any side for pay and plunder: But the Kings treasure was very low, and his enemies that pretended

pretended the Peoples ease from Taxes, and other specious things, had the Command of the Purfes of the City of *London*, and of most Cities and Corporate Towns in *England*; and of many particular Persons besides.

*B.* But how comes the People to be so corrupted, and what kind of People were they that did so seduce them?

*A.* The Seducers were of divers sorts. One sort were *Ministers*, *Ministers* (as they called themselves) of Christ; and sometimes in their Sermons to the People, Gods Embassadors, pretending to have a Right from God to govern every one his Parish; and their Assembly, the whole Nation.

*Secondly*, There were a very great number, though not comparable to the other, which notwithstanding that the Popes Power in *England*, both Temporal and Ecclesiastical, had been by Act of Parliament abolished, did still retain a belief that we ought to be governed by the Pope, whom they pretended to be the Vicar of Christ, and in the Right of Christ to be the Governour of all Christian People: and these were known by the Name of *PAPISTS*, as the *Ministers* I mentioned before, were commonly called *PRESBYTERIANS*.

*Thirdly*. There were not a few, who in the beginning of the Troubles were not discovered, but shortly after declared themselves for a Liberty in Religion, and those of different Opinions one from another: Some of them (because they would have all Congregations free and independant upon one another) were called *INDEPENDANTS*; others

that held Baptism to Infants and such as understood not into what they are Baptized, to be ineffectual, were called therefore *ANABAPTISTS*: Others, that held that *Christ's* Kingdom was at this time to begin upon the Earth, were called *FIFTH-MONARCHY-MEN*; besides divers other Sects, as *QUAKERS*, *ADAMITES*, &c. whose Names and peculiar Doctrines, I do not very well remember; and these were the Enemies which arose against His Majesty, from the private Interpretation of the Scripture, exposed to every mans scanning in his Mother-Tongue.

*Fourthly*, There were an exceeding great number of Men of the better sort, that had been so educated, as that in their Youth having read the Books written by famous Men of the Antient *Grecian* and *Roman* Common-wealths, concerning their Policy and great Actions; in which Books the Popular Government was extol'd by that glorious Name of Liberty, and Monarchy disgraced by the Name of Tyranny: they became thereby in love with their form of Government. And out of these men were chosen the greatest part of the *HOUSE OF COMMONS*: or if they were not the greatest part, yet by advantage of their Eloquence, were always able to sway the rest.

*Fifthly*, The City of *London*, and other great Towns of Trade, having in admiration the Prosperity of the Low-Countries, after they had revolted from their Monarch the King of *Spain*, were inclined to think, that the like change of Government here, would to them produce the like Prosperity.

*Sixthly*,

*Sixthly*, There were a very great Number, that had either wasted their Fortunes, or thought them too mean for the good parts they thought were in themselves; and more there were that had able Bodies, and saw no means how honestly to get their Bread: These longed for a War, and hoped to maintain themselves hereafter, by the luckie choosing of a Party to side with, and consequently did for the most part serve under them that had greatest plenty of Money.

*Lastly*, The People in general were so ignorant of their Duties, as that not one perhaps of 1000 knew what Right any Man had to command him, or what necessity there was of King or Commonwealth, for which he was to part with his Money against his will; but thought himself to be so much Master of whatsoever he possesst, that it could not be taken from him upon any pretence of Common Safety, without his own consent. *King*, they thought was but a Title of the highest Honour, which *Gentlemen, Knight, Baron, Earl, Duke*, were but steps to ascend to with the help of Riches; and had no Rule of Equity, but Precedents and Custom: and he was thought wisest, and fittest to be chosen for a Parliament, who was most averse to the granting of Subsidies, or other publick Payments.

*B.* In such a Constitution of People, methinks the King is already outed of his Government; so as they need not have taken Arms for it: For I cannot imagine, how the King should come by any means to resist them.

*A.* There was indeed very great difficulty in the

business; but of that point you will be better informed in the pursuit of this Narration.

B. But I desire to know first the several grounds of the Pretences, both of the *Pope* and of the *Presbyterians*, by which they claim a Right to govern us as they do in chief; and after that, from whence, and when crept in the Pretences of that *Long Parliament* for a *Democracie*.

A. As for the *Papists*, they challenge this Right from a Text in *Deut.* 17. and other like Texts, according to the old *Latin* Translation, in these words, *And he that out of Pride shall refuse to obey the Commandement of that Priest, which shall at that time minister before the Lord thy God, that man shall, by the Sentence of the Judge, be put to Death:* and because as the *Jews* were the People of God then, so is all Christendom the People of God now, they infer from thence, that the *Pope*, whom they pretend to be High Priest of all Christian People, ought also to be obeyed in all his Decrees by all Christians. upon pain of Death. Again, whereas in the *New Testament* Christ saith; *All Power is given unto me in Heaven and in Earth, go therefore and teach all Nations, and baptize them in the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost, and teach them to observe all those things that I have commanded you,* from thence they infer, that the Command of the Apostles was to be obeyed, and by consequence the Nations were bound to be governed by them, and especially by the Prince of the Apostles, *St. Peter*, and by his Successors the *Popes* of *Rome*.

B. For the Text in the Old Testament, I do not  
see

see how the Commandment of God to the *Jews* to obey their Priests, can be interpreted to have the like force in the Case of other Nations Christian, more than upon Nations Unchristian : For all the world are Gods people, unless we also grant, that a King cannot of an Infidel be made Christian without making himself subject to the Laws of that Apostle, or Priest, or Minister, that shall convert him. The *Jews* were a peculiar people of God, a Sacerdotal Kingdom, and bound to no other Law, but what first *Moses*, and afterwards every High Priest did go and receive immediately from the Mouth of God in Mount *Sinai*, in the Tabernacle of the Ark, and in the *Sanctum Sanctorum* of the Temple. And for the Text in *St. Matthew*, I know the words in the Gospel are not, *Go teach*, but *Go and make Disciples* ; and that there is a great difference between a Subject and a Disciple, and between teaching and commanding : and if such Texts as these must be so interpreted, why do not Christian Kings lay down their Titles of Majesty and Sovereignty, and call themselves the *Popes* Lieutenants ? But the Doctors of the *Romish Church* seem to decline that Title of *Absolute Power*, in their distinction of *Power Spiritual* and *Temporal* ; but this Distinction I do not very well understand.

*A.* By *Spiritual Power*, they mean the Power to determine Points of Faith, and to be Judges in the Inner-Court of Conscience of Moral Duties, and of a Power to punish those men that obey not their Precepts by Ecclesiastical Censure, that is, by Excommunication ; and this Power they say the *Pope*

## The History of the

hath immediately from Christ, without dependance upon any King or Sovereign Assembly, whose Subjects they be that stand Excommunicate: But for the Power Temporal, which consists in judging and punishing those Actions that are done against the Civil Law, they say they do not pretend to it directly, but onely indirectly; that is to say, so far forth as such Actions tend to the hindrance or advancement of Religion, *in ordine ad Spiritualia*.

B. What Power then is left to Kings and other Civil Sovereigns, which the Pope may not pretend to be *in ordine ad Spiritualia*?

A. None, or very little; and this Power the Pope not only pretends to in all Christendom, but some of his Bishops also in their several Diocesses, *jure Divino*, that is, immediately from Christ, without deriving it from the Pope.

B. But what if a Man refuse Obedience to this pretended Power of the Pope and his Bishops, what harm can Excommunication do him, especially if he be a Subject of another Sovereign?

A. Very great harm: for by the Popes or Bishops signification of it to the Civil Power, he shall be punished sufficiently.

B. He were in an ill case then that adventured to write or speak in defence of the Civil Power, that must be punished by him whose Rights he defended; like *Uzza*, that was slain because he would needs unbidden, put forth his hand to keep the Ark from falling. But what if a whole Nation should revolt from the Pope at once? what effect could Excommunication have upon the Nation?

A. Why



*A.* Why they should have no more Mass said, at least by any of the *Pope's* Priests. Besides, the *Pope* would have no more to do with them, but cast them off, and so they would be in the same case as if a Nation should be cast off by their King, and left to be Governed by themselves, or whom they would.

*B.* This would not be taken so much for a punishment to the People, as to the King; and therefore when a *Pope* Excommunicates a whole Nation, methinks he rather Excommunicates himself, than them. But I pray you tell me, what were the Rights the *Pope* pretended to in the Kingdoms of other Princes?

*A.* First, An Exemption of all Priests, Fryers, and Monks, in Criminal Causes, from the Cognizance of Civil Judges. Secondly, Collation of Benefices on whom he pleased, Native or Stranger; and Exaction of Tenths, Fruits, and other payments. Thirdly, Appeals to *Rome*, in all Causes where the Church could pretend to be concern'd. Fourthly, To be the Supream Judge concerning the Lawfulness of Marriage, (*i. e.* concerning the Hereditary Succession of Kings) and to have the Cognizance of all Causes concerning Adultery and Fornication.

*B.* Good! A Monoply of Women.

*A.* Fifthly, A power of absolving Subjects of their Duties, and of their Oaths of Fidelity to their Lawful Sovereigns, when the *Pope* should think-fit, for the Extirpation of Heresie.

*B.* This Power of Absolving Subjects of their Obedience, as also that other of being Judges of Man-

Manners and Doctrine, is as absolute a Sovereignty as is possible to be: and consequently, there must be two Kingdoms in one and the same Nation; and so no Man be able to know which of his Masters he must obey.

A. For my part, I should rather obey that Master that had the Right of making Laws, and of inflicting Punishments, than him that pretendeth only to a Right of making Canons, that is to say, Rules; and no Right of Coaction, or otherwise Punishing, but by Excommunication.

B. But the Pope pretends also, that his Canons are Laws; and for Punishing, can there be a greater than Excommunication, supposing it true (as the Pope saith it is) that he that dies Excommunicate is damn'd? which supposition, it seems, you believe not; else you would rather have chosen to obey the Pope, that could cast your Body and Soul into Hell, than the King, that can only kill the Body.

A. You say true; for it were very uncharitable in me to believe, that all *English-men* (except a few Papists) that have been born and called *Hereticks*, ever since the Reformation of Religion in *England*, should be Damn'd.

B. But for those that dye Excommunicate in the Church of *England* at this day, Do you not think them also Damn'd? and he that is Excommunicate for Disobedience to the Kings Law, either Spiritual or Temporal, is Excommunicate for Sin; and therefore, if he dye Excommunicate, and without desire of Reconciliation, he dyes Impenitent?

You

You see what follows. But to dye in Disobedience to the Precepts and Doctrine of those Men that have no Authority or Jurisdiction over us, is quite another Case, and bringeth no such Danger with it.

B. But what is this Heresie which the Church of Rome so cruelly persecutes, as to Depose Kings that do not, when they are bidden, turn all Hereticks out of their Dominions?

A. Heresie is a word, which when it is used without Passion, signifies a private Opinion: so the different Sects of the Old Philosophers, *Academians*, *Peripateticks*, *Epicureans*, *Stoicks*, &c. were called Heresie: But in the Christian Church, there was in the signification of that Word, comprehended a sinful Opposition to him that was chief Judge of Doctrines, in order to the Salvation of Mens Souls; and consequently, Heresie may be said to bear the same Relation to the power Spiritual, that Rebellion doth to the power Temporal; and is suitably to be persecuted by him that will preserve a power Spiritual, and Dominion over Mens Consciences.

B. It would be very well (because we are all of us permitted to read the Holy Scriptures, and bound to make them the Rule of our Actions both publick and private) that Heresie were by some Law defined, and the particular Opinions set forth for which men were to be condemned and punished as Hereticks; or else, not only men of mean capacity, but even the wisest and devoutest Christian may fall into Heresie, without any will to oppose the Church; for the Scriptures are hard, and the

the interpretations different of different men.

*A.* The meaning of the word *Heresie* is by Law declared in an Act of Parliament, in the first year of Queen *Elizabeth* ; wherein it is ordained, that the persons who had by the Queens Letters Patents the Authority Spiritual (meaning the High Commission) shall not have Authority to adjudge any matter or cause to be *Heresie*, but only such as heretofore have been Adjudged to be *Heresie* by the Authority of the Canonical Scriptures, or by the first 4 General Councils, or by any other General Council, where the same was declared *Heresie* by the express and plain words of the said Canonical Scriptures; or such as hereafter shall be adjudged *Heresie* by the High Court of Parliament of this Realm, with the assent of the Clergy in their Convocation.

*B.* It seems therefore, if there arise any new Error that hath not been yet declared *Heresie*, (and many such may arise) it cannot be judged *Heresie* without a Parliament; for a how foul soever the error be, it cannot have been declared *Heresie*, neither in the Scriptures nor in the Councils, because it was never before heard of; and consequently, there can be no Error unless it fall within the compass of Blasphemy against God, or Treason against the King) for which a man can in Equity be punished. Besides, who can tell what is declared by the Scripture, which every man is allowed to read and interpret to himself? Nay more, what Protestant, either of the Laity or Clergy (if every General Council can be a competent Judge of *Heresie*) is not already condemned? for divers Councils have declared

red a great many of our Doctrines to be Heresie (as they pretend) upon the Authority of the Scriptures.

A. What are those points, that the first four General Councils have delared Heresie?

B. The first *General Council* held at *Nicea*, declared all to be *Heresie* which was contrary to the *Nicene Creed*. Upon occasion of the Heresie of *Arius*, which was the denying the Divinity of Christ, the *Second General Council* held at *Constantinople* declar'd Heresie the Doctrine of *Macedonius*, which was, that the Holy Ghost was created. The *Third Council* assembled at *Ephesus*, condemned the Doctrine of *Nestorius*, that there were two persons in Christ. The *Fourth* held at *Calcedon*, condemned the Error of *Eutyches*, that there was but one nature in Christ. I know of no other points condemned in these 4 Councils, but such as concern Church-Government, or the same Doctrines taught by other men in other words. And these Councils were all called by the Emperors, and by them their Decrees confirmed, at the Petition of the Councils themselves.

A. I see by this, that both the calling of the Council, and the confirmation of their Doctrine and Church-Government, had no obligatory force, but from the Authority of the Emperor; how comes it then to pass, that they take upon them now a Legislative power, and say their Canons are Laws? That Text, *All power is given to me in Heaven and Earth*, had the same force then as it hath now, and conferred a Legislative Power on the Councils, not onely

onely over Christian men, but over all Nations in the world.

B. They say no; for the Power they pretend to is derived from this, that when a King was Converted from *Gentilism* to *Christianity*, he did by that very Submission to the *Bishop* that Converted him, submit to the *Bishops* Government, and became one of his Sheep; which Right therefore he could not have over any Nation that was not Christian.

A. Did *Silvester* (which was *Pope* of *Rome* in the time of *Constantine* the Great, converted by him) tell the Emperor his New Disciple beforehand, that if he became a Christian, he must be the *Popes* Subject?

B. I believe not; for it is likely enough, if he had told him so plainly, or but made him suspect it, he would either have been not Christian at all, or but a Counterfeit one.

A. But if he did not tell him so, and that plainly, it was foul play, not onely in a *Priest*, but in any Christian. And for this Derivation of their Right from the Emperors consent, it proceeds only from this, that they dare not challenge a Legislative Power, nor call their Canons, Laws in any Kingdome in Christendom, farther than the Kings make them so: But in *Peru*, when *Atabalipa* was King, the Fryer told him, That *Christ* being King of all the World, had given the disposing of all the Kingdomes therein to the *Pope*: And that the *Pope* had given *Peru* to the *Roman Emperour Charles* the 5. and required *Atabalipa* to resign it; and for refusing it, seized upon his Person by the *Spanish* Army their present, and murdered him. You see by this how much they claim, when they have Power to make it good. B

B. When began the *Popes* to take this Authority upon them first?

A. After the Inundation of *Northern* People had overflowed the *Western* Parts of the Empire, and possessed themselves of *Italy*, the People of the City of *Rome* submitted themselves, as well in *Temporals* as *Spirituals*, to their *Bishop*; and their first was the *Pope* a Temporal Prince, and stood no more in so great fear of the Emperors, which lived far off at *Constantinople*. In this time it was, that the *Pope* began by pretence of his *Power Spiritual*, to encroach upon the *Temporal Rights* of all the *Princes* of the *West*; and so continued gaining upon them, till his Power was at the highest, in that 300 years or thereabout, which passed between the time of *Pope Leo* the 3. and *Pope Innocent* the 3. For in this time *Pope Zachary* 1. deposed *Chilperick* then King of *France*, and gave the Kingdom to one of his Subjects, *Pepin*: And *Pepin* took from the *Lombards* a great part of their Territory, and gave it to the Church: shortly after, the *Lombards* having recovered their Estate, *Charles* the Great retook it, and gave it to the Church again, and *Pope Leo* the 3. made *Charles* Emperor.

B. But what Right did the *Pope* there pretend for the creating of an Emperour?

A. He pretended the Right of being Christs Vicar; and what Christ could give, his Vicar might give, and you know that Christ was King of all the World.

B. Yes, as God, and so he gives all the Kingdoms of

of the World, which nevertheless proceed from the consent of people, either for fear or hope.

*A.* But this gift of the Empire was in a more special manner, in such a manner as *Moses* had the Government of *Israel* given him, or rather as *Josuah* had it given him, to go in and out before the people as the *High Priest* should direct him; and so the Empire was understood to be given him on condition to be directed by the *Pope*: for when the *Pope* invested him with the Regal Ornaments, the people all cryed out *Deus dat*, that is to say, 'tis God that gives it: and from that time, all or most of the Christian Kings do put into their Titles the word *Dei gratia*, that is, By the gift of God: and their Successors use still to receive the Crown and Scepter from a Bishop.

'Tis certainly a very good custom for Kings to be put in mind by whose gift they Reign; but it cannot from that custom be inferr'd, that they receive the Kingdom by mediation from the *Pope*, or by any other Clergy: for the *Popes* themselves received the Papacy from the *Emperor*. The first that ever was elected Bishop of *Rome*, after Emperours were *Christians*, and without the *Emperors* consent, excused himself by Letter to the *Emperor*, with this, that the People and Clergy of *Rome* forced him to take it upon him, and prayed the *Emperor* to confirm it; which the *Emperor* did, but with Reprehension of their proceedings, and prohibition of the like for the time to come. The *Emperor* was *Lotharius*, and the *Pope*, *Calixtus* the first.

*A.* You see by this, the *Emperor* never acknowledged



ledged this gift of God was the gift of the *Pope*, but maintained the *Popedom* was the gift of the *Emperor*; but in process of time, by the negligence of the *Emperors*, (for the greatness of *Kings* makes them that they cannot easily descend into the obscure and narrow Mines of an ambitious Clergy,) they found means to make the people believe, there was a Power in the *Pope* and *Clergie*, which they ought to submit unto, rather than unto the Commands of their own *King*, whensoever it should come into Controversie; and to that end devised and decreed many new Articles of Faith, to the diminution of the Authority of *Kings*, and to the disjunction of them and their Subjects, and to a closer adherence of their Subjects to the *Church* of *Rome's* Articles, either not at all found in, or not well founded upon the Scripture; as first, That it should not be lawful for a *Priest* to Marry. What influence could that have upon the power of *Kings*? do you not see that by this, the *King* must of necessity either want the *Priesthood*, and therewith a great part of the Reverence due to him from the most Religious part of his Subjects, or else want lawful Heirs to succeed in? by which, means being not taken for the Head of the *Church*, he was sure in any Controversie between him and the *Pope*, that his Subjects would be against him.

B. Is not a Christian *King* as much a *Bishop* now, as the Heathen *Kings* were of old? for amongst them, *Episcopus* was a name common to all *Kings*. Is not he a *Bishop* now, to whom God hath committed

mitted the charge of all the Souls of his Subjects, both of the *Laity* and of the *Clergy*? And though he be in relation to our Saviour who is the chief Pastor of Sheep, yet compared to his own Subjects, they are all Sheep, both *Laick* and *Clergy*, and he onely Shephard: and seeing a Christian *Bishop* is but a Christian indued with power to govern the *Clergy*, it follows that every Christian *King* is not onely a *Bishop*, but an *Archbishop*, and his whole *Kingdom* his *Diocess*; and though it were granted that Imposition of Hands were necessary for a *Priest*, yet seeing *Kings* have the power of Government of the *Clergy* that are the Subjects, even before Baptism, the Baptism it self wherein he is received as a Christian, is a sufficient Imposition of Hands; so that whereas before, he was a *Bishop*, now he is a Christian *Bishop*.

A. For my part I agree with you, this Prohibition of Marriage to *Priests* came in about the time of *Pope Gregory* the Seventh, and *William* the First *King* of *England*; by which means the *Pope* had in *England*, what with Secular, and what with Regular *Priests*, a great many lusty Batchelers at his Service. Secondly, That *Auricular Confession* to a *Priest* was necessary to Salvation. 'Tis true, that before that time, Confession to a *Priest* was usual, and performed for the most part (by him that Confessed) in writing: but that use was taken away about the time of *King Edward* the Third, and *Priests* commanded to take Confessions from the Mouth of the Confitent; and men did generally believe, that without *Confession* and *Absolution* before

fore their departure out of the World, they could not be saved ; and having *Absolution* from a *Priest*, they could not be damned. You understand by this, how much every man would stand in awe of the *Pope* and *Clergy* more than they would of the *King* ; and what inconveniency it is for a State to have their Subjects confess their secret thoughts to Spies.

B. Yes : as much as *Eternal Torture* is more terrible than *Death*, so much they would fear the *Clergy* more than the *King*.

A. And though perhaps the *Roman Clergy* will not maintain that a *Priest* hath power to remit Sins absolutely , but only with a condition of Repentance ; yet the people were never so instructed by them, but were left to believe that whensoever they had *Absolution*, their precedent Sins were all discharged, when their Penance, which they took for Repentance, was performed. In the same time began the Article of *Transubstantiation* : for it had been disputed a long time before, in what manner a man did eat the Body of our Saviour *Jesus Christ*, as being a point very difficult for a man to conceive and imagine clearly ; but now it was made very clear , that the *Bread* was *Transubstantiated* into *Christs Body*, and so was become no more *Bread*, but *Flesh*.

B. It seems then that *Christ* had many *Bodies*, and was in as many places at once, as there were Communicants : I think the *Priests* then were so wanton as to insist upon the dulness , not only of common people, but also of Kings and their Counsellors.

A. I am now in a Narration, not in a Disputation, and therefore I would have you at this time to consider nothing else but what effect this Doctrine would work upon Kings and their Subjects in relation to the *Clergie*, who onely were able of a piece of *Bread* to make our *Saviours Body*, and thereby at the hour of death to save their Souls.

B. For my part, it would have an effect on me, to make me think them Gods, and to stand in awe of them as of God himself if he were visibly present.

A. Besides these and other Articles tending to the upholding of the *Pope's* Authority, they had many fine points in their Ecclesiastical Policy conducing to the same end; of which I will mention only such as were established within the same time: for then it was the Order came up of *Preaching Friars*, that wandred up and down with power to Preach in what Congregation they pleased, and were sure enough to instil into the people nothing that might lessen their obedience to the *Church of Rome*, but on the contrary, whatsoever might give advantage to it against the Civil Power: besides, they privately insinuated themselves with Women, and Men of weak judgments, confirming their adherence to the *Pope*, and urging them in the time of their sickness to be beneficial to it, by contribution of Money, or building Religious Houses, or works of Piety, and necessary for the remission of their Sins.

B. I do not remember that I read of any Kingdom or State in the World, where liberty was

was given to any private man to call the people together, and make Orations frequently to them, or at all, without first making the State acquainted except only in *Christendom*. I believe the Heathen King fore-saw that a few such Orators would be able to make a great Sedition. *Moses* did indeed command to read the Scriptures, and expound them in the *Synagogues* every *Sabbath-day*; but the Scriptures then were nothing else but the Laws of the Nation delivered unto them by *Moses* himself. I believe it would do no hurt if the Laws of *England* also were often read and expounded in the several Congregations of *English men* at times appointed, that they may know what to do; for they know already what to believe.

A. I think that neither the Preaching of *Friers* nor *Monks*, nor of *Parochial Priests*, tended to teach men what, but whom to believe: for the Power of the *Mighty* hath no foundation, but in the opinion and belief of the people; and the end which the *Pope* had in multiplying Sermons, was no other, but to prop and enlarge his own Authority over all Christian Kings and States.

B. Within the same time, *that is*, between the time of the Emperour *Charles the Great*, and of King *Edward the Third of England*, began their second Policy, which was to bring Religion into an Art, and thereby to maintain all their Degrees of the *Roman Church* by Disputation, not only from the Scriptures, but also from the Philosophy of *Aristotle*, both Moral and Natural: and to that end, the *Pope* exhorted the said Emperour by Letter,

ter to erect Schools of all kinds of Literature ; and from thence began the Institution of Universities : for not long after, the Universities began in *Paris*, and in *Oxford*. It is true that there were Schools in *England* before that time , in several places , for the instruction of Children in the *Latine* Tongue , that is to say, in the Tongue of the *Church*; but for an University of Learning, there was none erected till that time, though it be not unlikely there might be then some that taught *Philosophy*, *Logick*, and other Arts, in divers Monasteries, the *Monks* having little else to do but to study. After some Colledges were built to that purpose, it was not long before many more were added to them by the Devotion of *Princes* and *Bishops*, and other wealthy men; and the Discipline therein was confirmed by the *Popes* that then were, and abundance of Scholars sent thither by their friends to study, as to a place from whence the way was open and easie to preferment both in *Church* and *Common-wealth*. The profit the *Church* of *Rome* expected from them, and in effect received, was the Maintenance of the *Pope's* Doctrine, and of his Authority over Kings and their Subjects , by School-Divines, who striving to make good many points of Faith incomprehensible, and calling in the Philosophy of *Aristotle* to their assistance, wrote great Books of School-Divinity, which no man else, nor they themselves, were able to understand, as any man may conceive that shall consider the writings of *Peter Lombard*, or *Scotus*, or of him that wrote Commentaries upon him, or of

*Suarez*,

and  
ies :  
aris,  
ools  
for  
gue ,  
but  
ne e-  
likely  
ophy,  
the  
After  
t was  
them  
other  
con-  
abun-  
ds to  
open  
Com-  
e ex-  
as the  
of his  
, by  
many  
ng in  
stance,  
ich no  
under-  
onsider  
or of  
or of  
Suarez,

Suarez, or of any other School-Divines of latter times : which kind of Learning nevertheless hath been much admired by two sorts of men, otherwise prudent enough ; the one of which sorts were those that were already Devoted, and really affectionate to the *Roman Church*, for they believed the Doctrine before , but admired the Arguments because they understood them not, and yet found the Conclusions to their mind. The other sort were negligent men, that had rather admire with others, than take the pains to examine ; so that all sorts of people were fully resolved that both the Doctrine was true, and the *Pope's* Authority no more than what was due to him. I see that a Christian King , or State , how well soever provided he be of Money and Arms, (where the *Church of Rome* hath such authority) will have but a hard match of it, for want of men ; for their Subjects will hardly be drawn into the Field, and fight with courage against their Consciences.

A. It is true that great rebellions have been raised by *Church-men* in the *Pope's* quarrel against *Kings*, as in *England* against *King John*, and in *France* against *King Henry* the Fourth, wherein the *Kings* had a more considerable part on their sides, than the *Pope* had on his, and shall always have so, if they have money ; for there are but few, whose Consciences are so tender as to refuse money when they want it : but the great mischief done to *Kings* upon pretence of Religion, is when the *Pope* gives power to one *King* to invade another.

B. I wonder how *King Henry* the Eighth so utterly  
B  
terly

terly extinguished the Authority of the *Pope* in *England*, and that without any Rebellion at home, or any invasion from abroad ?

*A. First*, The *Priests*, *Monks*, and *Friars*, being in the height of their Power, were now for the most part grown insolent and licentious, and thereby the force of their Arguments was now taken away by the scandal of their lives, which the Gentry, and men of good education, easily perceived; and the Parliament consisting of such persons, were therefore willing to take away their Power; and generally the Common people, which for a long time had been in love with Parliaments, were not displeased therewith. *Secondly*, The Doctrine of *Luther* beginning a little before, was now by a great many men of the greatest Judgments so well received, as that there was no hope to restore the *Pope* to his Power by Rebellion. *Thirdly*, the Revenue of the *Abbies* & all other *Religious Houses*, falling hereby into the *Kings* hands, and by him being disposed of to the most eminent Gentlemen in every County, could not but make them do their best to confirm themselves in the possession of them. *Fourthly*, *King Henry* was of a nature quick, and severe in the Punishing of such as should be the first to oppose his designs. *Lastly*, As to Invasion from abroad, if the *Pope* had given the *Kingdom* to another *Prince*, it had been in vain; for *England* is another manner of *Kingdom* than *Navar*: Besides, the *French* and *Spanish* Forces were employed at that time one against another; and though they had been at leisure, they would have found



found perhaps no better Success, than the *Spaniard* found afterwards in 1588. Nevertheless, notwithstanding the Insolence, Avarice, and Hypocrisie of the then *Clergy*, and notwithstanding the *Doctrine* of *Luther*; if the *Pope* had not provoked the *King*, by endeavouring to cross his Marriage with his Second Wife, his Authority might have remained in *England* till there had risen some other Quarrel.

B. Did not the *Bishops* that then were, and had taken an Oath, wherein was among other things, that they should defend and maintain the Regal Rights of St. *Peter*, the words are *Regalia Sancti Petri*; which nevertheless some have said, are *Regulas Sancti Petri*, (that is to say) St. *Peter's* Rules or *Doctrine*; and that the *Clergy* afterwards did read it, (being perhaps written in *Short-hand*) by a mistake to the *Pope's* Advantage, *Regalia*. Did not (I say) the *Bishops* oppose that Act of Parliament, against the *Popes*, and against the Taking of the *Oath of Supremacy*?

A. No, I do not find the *Bishops* did many of them oppose the *King*; for having no Power without him, it had been great Imprudence to provoke his Anger: There was besides a controversie in those times between the *Pope* and the *Bishops*; most of which did maintain, that they exercised their Jurisdiction Episcopal in the Right of *God*, as immediately as the *Pope* himself did Exercise the same over the whole *Church*; and because they saw, that by this Act of the *King* in Parliament, they were to hold their Power no more of the *Pope*, and never thought of holding it of

the King, they were perhaps better content to let the Act of Parliament pass in the Reign of *King Edward* the Sixth; the Doctrine of *Luther* had taken such great Root in *England*, that they threw out a great many of the *Pope's* new Articles of Faith; which *Queen Mary* succeeding him, restored again, together with all that had been abolished by *King Henry* the Eighth, saving (that which could not be restored) the Religious Houses: and the *Bishops* and *Clergy* of *King Edward*, were partly burnt for Hereticks, partly fled, and partly recanted; and they that fled, betook themselves to those places beyond Sea, where the Reformed Religion was either protected, or not persecuted; who after the Decease of *Queen Mary*, returned again to Favour and Preferment under *Queen Elizabeth*, that restored the Religion of her Brother *King Edward*; and so it had continued to this day, excepting the Interruption made in this late Rebellion of the *Presbyterians*, and other *Democratical Men*. But though the *Romish* Religion were now cast out by the Law, yet there were abundance of People, and many of them of the Nobility, that still retained the Religion of their Ancestors; who as they were not much molested in points of Conscience, so they were not by their own Inclination very troublesome to the Civil Government; but by the secret Practices of the *Jesuits*, and other Emissaries of the *Roman Church*, they were made less quiet than they ought to have been; and some of them, to venture upon the most horrid Act that ever had been heard of before, I mean,  
upon

upon the *Gunpowder-Treason*: And upon that account, the *Papists* in *England* have been looked upon as men that would not be sorry for any Disorders here, that might possibly make way to the restoring of the *Pope's* Authority: and therefore I named them for one of the Distempers of the State of *England*, in the time of our late *King Charles*.

B. I see that *Monsieur du Plessis*, and Dr. *Morton* Bishop of *Durham*, writing of the Progress of the *Pope's* Power, and intituling their Books, one of them, *The Mystery of Iniquity*, the other, *The Grand Imposture*, were both in the right; for I believe there was never such another Cheat in the World: And I wonder that the *Kings* and *States* of *Christianity* never perceived it.

A. It is manifest they did perceive it. How else durst they make War against the *Pope*, and some of them take him out of *Rome* it self, and carry him away Prisoner? but if they would have freed themselves from his Tyranny, they should have agreed together, and made themselves every one (as *Henry* the eighth did) Head of the *Church* within their own respective Dominions; but not agreeing, they let his Power continue, every one hoping to make use of it (when there should be cause) against his Neighbor.

B. Now, as to the other Distemper by *Presbyterians*: How came their Power to be so great, being of themselves for the most part, but so many poor Scholars?

A. This Controversie between the *Papists* and *Reformed Churches*, could not chuse but make every

ry man, to the best of his Power, examine by the *Scriptures*, which of them was in the Right; and to that end, they were Translated into the *Vulgar Tongue*: whereas before, the Translation of them was not allowed, nor any man to read them, but such as had expresse License so to do: For the *Pope* did concerning the *Scriptures*, the same that *Moses* did concerning *Mount Sinai*; *Moses* suffered no man to go up to it, to hear *God* speak, or gaze upon him, but such as he himself took with him; and the *Pope* suffered none to speak with *God* in the *Scriptures*, that had not some part of the *Pope's Spirit* in him, for which he might be trusted.

B. Certainly, *Moses* did therein very wisely, and according to *God's* own Commandment.

A. No doubt of it, and the Event it self hath made it since appear so; for after the *Bible* was Translated into *English*, every Man, nay every Boy and Wench that could read *English*, thought they spoke with *God* Almighty, and understood what he said; when by a certain Number of *Chapters* a Day, they had read the *Scriptures* once or twice over, the Reverence and Obedience due to the *Reformed Church* here, and to the *Bishops* and *Pastors* therein, was cast off; and every man became a Judge of *Religion*, and an Interpreter of the *Scriptures* to himself.

B. Did not the *Church* of *England* intend it should be so? What other end could they have in recommending the *Bible* to me, if they did not mean I should make it the Rule of my *Actions*? else they might have kept it (though open to themselves,

selves, to me) Sealed up in *Hebrew*, *Greek*, and *Latine*; and fed me out of it in such measure, as had been requisite for the Salvation of my Soul, and the *Churches Peace*.

A. I confess, this License of Interpreting the *Scripture*, was the cause of so many several Sects as have lain hid till the beginning of the late *King's* Reign; and did then appear, to the Disturbance of the *Common-Wealth*. But to return to the Story; Those Persons that fled for *Religion* in the time of *Queen Mary*, relided, for the most part, in Places where the *Reformed Religion* was Professed, and Governed by an *Assembly of Ministers*, who also were not a little made use of (for want of better *Statesmen*) in Points of *Civil Government*; which pleased so much the *English* and *Scotch Protestants* that lived amongst them, that at their Return they wished there were the same Honour and Reverence given to the *Ministry* in their own Countries; and in *Scotland* (*King James* being then Young) soon (with the Help of some of the powerful Nobility) they brought it to pass: Also, they that returned into *England* in the beginning of the Reign of *Queen Elizabeth*, endeavoured the same here; but could never effect it, till this last *Rebellion*, nor without the Help of the *Scots*; and it was no sooner effected, but it was defeated again by the other *Sects*; which by the Preaching of the *Presbyterians*, and private Interpretation of *Scripture*, were grown numerous.

B. I know indeed, that in the beginning of the late War, the Power of the *Presbyterians* was so

very great, that not onely the Citizens of *London* were, almost all of them, at their *Devotion*; but also the greatest part of all other Cities and Market-Towns of *England*: but you have not yet told me, by what Art, and what Degrees they became so strong.

*A.* It was not their own Art alone that did it; but they had the Concurrence of a great many Gentlemen, that did no less desire a *Popular Government* in the *Civil State*, than these Ministers did in the *Church*: And as these did in the *Pulpit* draw the People to their Opinions, and to dislike of the *Church-Government*, *Canons*, and *Common-Prayer-Book*; so did the other make them in love with *Democracie*, by their *Harangues* in the *Parliament*, and by their Discourse and Communication with People in the Country, continually extolling of *Liberty*, and inveighing against *Tyranny*, leaving the people to collect of themselves, that this *Tyranny* was the present *Government* of the *State*: And as the *Presbyterians* brought with them into their *Churches* their *Divinity* from the *Universities*, so did many of the Gentlemen bring their *Politicks* from thence into the *Parliament*; but neither of them did this very boldly in the time of *Q. Eliz.* And though it be not likely, that all of them did it out of Malice, but many of them out of Error; yet certainly the Chief Leaders were ambitious *Ministers*, and ambitious *Gentlemen*; the *Ministers* envying the Authority of *Bishops*, whom they thought less Learned; and the *Gentlemen* envying the *Privy-Council*, whom they thought less Wise than themselves: for 'tis a hard

hard matter for men, who do all think highly of their own Wits, (when they have also acquired the Learning of the *University*) to be perswaded, that they want any ability requisite for the Government of a *Common-Wealth*; especially having read the Glorious Histories, and the Sententious Politicks of the Antient Popular Government of the *Greeks* and *Romans*; amongst whom *Kings* were hated, and branded with the name of *Tyrants*; and Popular Government (though no *Tyrant* was ever so cruel as a Popular Assembly) passed by the Name of *Liberty*. The *Presbyterian Ministers*, in the beginning of the Reign of *Q. Eliz.* did not (because they durst not) publicly Preach against the Discipline of the *Church*; but not long after (by the Favor herhaps of some great Courtier) they went abroad Preaching in most of the Market-Towns of *England* (as the Preaching *Fryers* had formerly done) upon working Days in the Morning; in which these, and others of the same Tenets, that had charge of Souls, both by the Manner and Matter of their Preaching, applied themselves wholly to the winning of the People to a liking of their Doctrines, and good opinion of their Persons.

And first, for the manner of their Preaching; They so framed their Countenance and Gesture at the entrance into the Pulpit, and their Pronunciation, both in their Prayer and Sermon; and used the *Scripture-phrase*, whether understood by the People or not, as that no *Tragedian* in the World could have Acted the part of a right Godly man better than these did; inasmuch, that a man unacquain-

ted with such Art, could never suspect any Ambitious Plot in them, to raise Sedition against the *State*, as they then had designed ; or doubt, that the Vehemence of their Voice, (for the same word with the usual Pronunciation, had been of little force) and Forcedness of their Gesture and Looks, could arise from any thing else but Zeal to the Service of *God*. And by this Art they came into such Credit, that numbers of men used to go forth of their own Parishes and Towns, on working-days, leaving their Calling, and on *Sunday*, leaving their own *Churches*, to hear them Preach in other Places ; and to despise their own and all other Preachers, that Acted not as well as they. And as for those *Ministers* that did not usually Preach, but instead of Sermons, did read to the People such *Homilies* as the *Church* had appointed ; they esteemed and called them *Dumb Dogs*.

*Secondly*, For the Matter of their Sermons : Because the Anger of the People in the late *Roman* Usurpation was then fresh, they saw there could be nothing more Gracious with them, than to Preach against such other points of the *Romish Religion*, as the *Bishops* had not yet condemned ; that so receding farther from *Popery* than they did, they might with Glory to themselves, leave a Suspicion on the *Bishops*, as men not yet well purged from *Idolatry*.

*Thirdly*, before their Sermons their Prayer was, or seemed to be *ex tempore* ; which they pretended to be dictated by the Spirit of *God* within them ; and many of the People believed or seemed to believe it ; or any man might see that they did not  
take



take care beforehand, what they should say in their Prayers: And from hence came a dislike of the *Common Prayer-Book*, which is a set form præmeditated, that men might see to what they were to say *Amen*.

*Fourthly*, They did never in their Sermons, or but lightly, inveigh against the Lucrative vices of men of Trade or Handicraft, such as are faining, lying, couzening, Hypocrisie, and other uncharitableness (except want of Charity to their Pastor, and to the faithful) which was a great ease to the generality of Citizens, and the Inhabitants of *Market-Towns*, and no little profit to themselves.

*Fifthly*, by preaching up an opinion, that men were to be assured of their Salvation by the Testimony of their own *private Spirit*, meaning the Holy Ghost, dwelling within them: And from this opinion, the People, that found in themselves a sufficient hatred towards the *Papists*, and an ability to repeat the Sermons of these men at their coming home, made no doubt, but that they had all that was necessary, how fraudulently and spightfully soever they behaved themselves to their Neighbours, that were not reckoned amongst the Saints; and sometimes to those also.

*Sixthly*, They did indeed with great earnestness and severity inveigh often against two Sins, Carnal Lust, and vain Swearing; which without question, was very well done: but the Common people were thereby inclined to believe, that nothing else was Sin, but that which was forbidden in the 3<sup>d</sup>. and 7<sup>th</sup>. Commandment: For few men do understand by the Name

Name of *Lust*, any other Concupiscence than that which is forbidden in the seventh Commandment: for men are not ordinarily said to Lust after another man's Cattle, or other goods or possessions, & therefore never made much Scruple of the Acts of Fraud and Malice, but endeavoured to keep themselves from Uncleanness only, or at least, from the Scandal of it: and whereas they did both in their Sermons and Writings maintain and inculcate, that the very first Motions of the Minde, that is to say, the delight Men and Women took in the sight of one anothers Form, though they checked the proceedings thereof, so that it never grew up to be a Design, was nevertheless a Sin; they brought Young Men into Desperation, and to think themselves damn'd, because they could not (which no man can, and is contrary to the Constitution of Nature) behold a delightful Object without Delight: And by this means they became Confessors to such as were thus troubled in Conscience, and were obeyed by them as their Spiritual Doctors in all Cases of Conscience.

B. Yes, divers of them did Preach frequently against Oppression.

A. 'Tis true, I had forgot that; but it was before such as were free enough from it (I mean) the Common People, who would easily believe themselves oppressed, but never Oppressors: And therefore you may reckon this amongst their Artifices, to make their People believe they were oppressed by the *King*, or perhaps by the *Bishops*, or both, and inclined the meaner sort to their Party afterward, when there should be occasion: But this was but sparingly

ringly done in the time of *Q. Eliz.* whose Fear and Jealousie they were afraid of. Nor had they as yet any great Power in the *Parliament-House*, whereby to call in question her Prerogative, by Petitions of Right, and other Devices, as they did afterwards, when *Democratical Gentlemen* had received them into their Council, for the Design of changing the *Monarchical Government* into *Popular*, which they called *Liberty*.

*B.* Who could think, that such Horrible Designs as these, could so easily and so long remain, covered with the Cloak of Godliness? for that they were most Impious Hypocrites, is manifest enough by the War these Proceedings ended in, and by the Impious acts in the War committed. But when began first to appear in *Parliament* the Attempt of *Popular Government*, and by whom?

*A.* As to the time of attempting the Change of Government from *Monarchical* to *Democratical*, we must distinguish: They did not challenge the Sovereignty in plain terms, and by that Name, till they had slain the *King*; nor the Rights thereof altogether, by particular Heads, till the *King* was driven from *London* by Tumults raised in his City against him, and retired for the security of the Person to *York*; where he had not been many days, when they sent unto him *Nineteen Propositions*, whereof above a Dozen were Demands of several Powers, Essential parts of the Power Sovereign: but before that time, they had demanded some of them (in a Petition which they called a *Petition of Right*) which nevertheless the *King* had granted them

them in a former Parliament : though he deprived himself thereby, not onely of the Power to Levy Mony without their consent, but also of his ordinary Revenue by Custome of Tonnage and Poudage, and of the Liberty to put into Custody such men as he thought likely to disturb the Peace, and raise Sedition in the Kingdome. As for the men that did this, 'tis enough to say, they were the Members of the last Parliament, and of some other Parliaments in the beginning of the Reign of King *Charles*, and the end of the Reign of King *James* : To name them all is not necessary, farther than the Story shall require ; most of them were Members of the House of Commons, some few also of the Lords : But all such as had a great Opinion of their sufficiency in Politicks, which they thought was not sufficiently taken notice of by the King.

B. How could the Parliament, when the King had a great Navy, and a great number of Train'd Souldiers, and all the Magazines of Ammunition in his power, be able to begin the War ?

A. The *King* had these things in his Right, but that signifies little, when they had the Custody of the *Navy* and *Magazines*, and with them all the *Trained Souldiers*, and in a manner all the Subjects were by the Preaching of *Presbyterian Ministers*, and the seditious whispering of false and ignorant Politicians, made his Enemies ; and when the *King* could have no Money but what the *Parliament* should give him, which you may be sure should not be enough to maintain his Legal Power, which they intended to take from him.

him. And yet I think they would never have adventured into the Field, but for that unlucky business of imposing upon the *Scots* (who were all *Presbyterians*) our *Book of Common-Prayer*: for I believe the *English* would never have taken well that the *Parliament* should make War upon the *King* upon any provocation, unless it were in their own defence, in case the *King* should first make War upon them; and therefore it behoved them to provoke the *King* that he might do something that might look like hostility. It hapned in the year 1637. that the *King*, by the advice (as it is thought) of the *Arch-Bishop* of *Canterbury*, sent down a *Book of Common Prayer* into *Scotland*, not differing in substance from ours, nor much in words, besides the putting of the word *Presbyter* for that of *Minister*, commanding it to be used (for Conformity to this *Kingdom*) by the Ministers there, for an ordinary form of *Divine Service*; this being read out in the Church at *Edinburgh*, caused such a Tumult there, that he that read it had much adoe to escape with his life, and gave occasion to the greatest part of the *Nobility*, and others, to enter (by their own Authority) into a *Covenant* amongst themselves to put down *Episcopacy* without consulting the *King*; which they presently did, animated thereto by their own Confidence, or by Assurance from some of the *Democratical English-men*, that in former *Parliaments* had been the greatest Opposers of the *King's* Interest, that the *King* would not be able to raise an Army to Chastise them, without calling a *Parliament*, which would be sure

to favour them; for the thing which those *Democrats* chiefly then aimed at, was to force the *King* to call a *Parliament*, which he had not done of ten Years before; as having found no help, but hinderance to his Designs in the *Parliaments* he had formerly called. Howsoever, contrary to their Expectation, by the help of his better-affected Subjects of the *Nobility* and *Gentry*, he made a shift to raise a sufficient Army, to have reduced the *Scots* to their former Obedience, if it had proceeded to Battle: And with this Army he marched himself into *Scotland*, where the *Scotch-Army* was also brought into the Field against him, as if they meant to Fight. But then the *Scotch* sent to the *King* for leave to treat by *Commissioners* on both sides, and the *King* willing to avoid the Destruction of his own Subjects, condescended to it; the issue was Peace, and the *King* thereupon went to *Edinburgh*, and passed an *Act* of *Parliament* there to their Satisfaction.

B. Did he not then confirm *Episcopacy*?

A. No, but yielded to the abolishing of it; but by the means, the *English* were crossed in their Hope of a *Parliament*: But the *Democrats*, formerly Opposers of the *King's* Interest, ceased not to endeavour still to put the two Nations into a War, to the end the *King* might buy the *Parliament's* Help at no less a Price than *Sovereignty* it self.

B. But what was the Cause that the *Gentry* and *Nobility* of *Scotland* were so averse from *Episcopacy*? For I can hardly believe, that their Consciences were

were extraordinarily tender, nor that they were so very great *Divines*, as to know what was the true *Church-Discipline* Establiſhed by our *Saviour*. and his *Apostles*; nor yet so much in love with their *Ministers*, as to be over-ruled by them in the Government either *Ecclesiastical* or *Civil*; for in their Lives they were just as other Men are, Pursuers of their own Interests and preferments; wherein they were not more opposed by the *Bishops* than by their *Presbyterian-Ministers*.

A. Truly, I do not know; I cannot enter into other Men's Thoughts, farther than I am led by the Consideration of *Humane Nature* in general: But upon this Consideration I see, *First*, That Men of Antient Wealth and Nobility, are not apt to brook, that poor Scholars should (as they must, when they are made *Bishops*) be their Fellows. *Secondly*, That from the Emulation of Glory between the *Nations*, they be willing to see their *Nation* afflicted with *Civil War*, and might hope, by aiding the Rebels here, to acquire some power over the *English*; at least, so far as to establish here the *Presbyterian Discipline*; which was also one of the points they afterwards openly demanded. *Lastly*, They might hope for, in the War, some great sum of Money as a reward of their assistance, besides great Booty, which they afterwards obtained: but whatsoever was the cause of their hatred to *Bishops*, the pulling them down was not all they aimed at; if it had (now that *Episcopacy* was abolished by *Act of Parliament*) they would have rested satisfied, which they did not; for after the *King* was returned to *London*,

*don*, the *English Presbyterians* and *Democraticals*, by whose favour they had put down *Bishops* in *Scotland*, thought it reason to have the assistance of the *Scotch* for the pulling down of *Bishops* in *England*; and in order thereunto, they might perhaps deal with the *Scots* secretly to rest unsatisfied with that Pacification which they were before contented with: howsoever it was, not long after the *King* was returned to *London*, they sent up to some of their friends at *Court* a certain Paper containing (as they pretended) the Articles of the said Pacification: a false and Scandalous Paper, which was by the *King's* Command burnt (as I have heard) publickly; and so both parts returned to the same Condition as they were in when the *King* went down with his Army.

*B.* And so there was a great deal of Money cast away to no purpose; but you have not told me who was *General* of that Army.

*A.* I told you the *King* was there in Person; he that commanded under him was the *Earl of Arundel*; a man that wanted not either Valour or Judgement: but to proceed to Battle, or to Treaty, was not in his Power, but in the *King's*.

*B.* He was a man of a most Noble and Loyal Family, and whose Ancestors had formerly given a great overthrow to the *Scots* in their own Country; and in all likelihood he might have given them the like now, if they had Fought.

*A.* He might indeed; but it had been but a kind of Superstition to have made him *General* upon that account, though many *Generals* heretofore



fore have been chosen for the good luck of their Ancestors in the like occasions. In the long War between *Athens* and *Sparta*, a *General* of the *Athenians* by Sea won many Victories against the *Spartans*; for which cause, after his death they chose his Son for *General* with ill success: The *Romans* that Conquered *Carthage* by the Valor and Conduct of *Scipio*, when they were to make War again in *Africk* against *Cæsar*, chose another *Scipio*, a man Valiant and Wise enough, but he perished in the employment. And to come home to our own Nation, the *Earl of Essex* made a fortunate Expedition to *Cadiz*, but his Son, sent afterwards to the same place, could do nothing. 'Tis but a foolish Superstition, to hope that God has entailed success in War upon a Name or Family.

B. After the Pacification broken, what succeeded next?

A. The King sent *Duke Hamilton* with Commission and Instructions into *Scotland* to call a *Parliament* there, (but all was to no purpose,) and to use all the means he could otherwise; but the *Scots* were resolved to raise an Army, and to enter into *England*, to deliver (as they pretended) their grievances to his Majesty in a Petition, because the King (they said) being in the hands of evil Counsellors, they could not otherwise obtain their right; but the truth is, they were otherwise animated to it by the *Democratical* and *Presbyterian English*, with a promise of Reward, and hope of Plunder: some have said that *Duke Hamilton* also did rather encourage them to, than deter them from the

the Expedition ; as hoping by the disorder of the two *Kingdoms*, to bring to pass that which he had formerly been accused to endeavour, to make himself *King of Scotland* ; but I take this to have been a very uncharitable Censure, upon so little ground to judge so hardly of a man, that afterwards lost his Life in seeking to procure the Liberty of the *King* his Master. This resolution of the *Scots* to enter into *England* being known, the *King* wanting Money to raise an Army against them, was now, as his Enemies here wished, constrained to call a *Parliament* to meet at *Westminster* the 13 of *April* 1640.

B. Methinks a *Parliament* of *England*, if upon any occasion, should furnish the *King* with Money now in a War against the *Scots*, out of an inveterate Disaffection to that Nation, that had always taken part with their Enemies the *French*, and which always esteemed the Glory of *England* for an abatement of their own.

A. 'Tis indeed commonly seen, that Neighbour-Nations envy one anothers Honour, and that the less potent bears the greater malice ; but that hinders them not from agreeing in those things which their common ambition leads them to : And therefore the *King* found for the War but the less help from this *Parliament* ; and most of the Members thereof in their ordinary Discourses seemed to wonder why the *King* should make a War upon *Scotland*, and in that *Parliament* sometime called them their *Brethren the Scots* : but instead of taking the *King's* business, which was the raising of Money, into their consideration, they fell

fell upon the redressing of Grievances, and especially such ways of levying Money as in the last intermission of *Parliament* the *King* had been forced to use, such as were *Ship-money*, for *Knighthood*, and such other Vails (as one may call them) of the *Regal Office*, which Lawyers had found justifiable by the antient Records of the *Kingdom*; besides, they fell upon the Actions of divers *Ministers of State*, though done by the *Kings* own Command and Warrant, insomuch, that before they were called, the Money which was necessary for this War (if they had given Money, as they never meant to do) had come too late. It is true, there was mention of a sum of Money to be given the *King* by way of Bargain, for relinquishing his Right to *Ship-money*, and some other of his Prerogatives; but so seldom, and without determining any Sum, that it was in vain for the *King* to hope for any success; and therefore on the Fifth of *May* following, he dissolved them.

B. Where then had the *King* Money to raise and pay his Army?

A. He was forced the second time to make use of the *Nobility* and *Gentry*, who contributed some more, some less, according to the greatness of their Estates; but amongst them all, they made up a very sufficient Army.

B. It seems then that the same Men that crossed his business in the *Parliament*, now out of *Parliament* advanced it all they could; What was the reason of that?

A. The greatest part of the Lords in *Parliament*,  
and

and the Gentry thought *England* were more affected to *Monarchy* than to a *Popular Government*, but so as not to endure to hear of the *King's* absolute Power; which made them in time of *Parliament* easily to condescend to abridg it, and bring the Government to a mixt *Monarchy*, as they called it, wherein the absolute Sovereignty should be divided between the *King*, the *House of Lords*, and the *House of Commons*.

B. But how if they cannot agree?

A. I think they never thought of that; but I am sure they never meant the Sovereignty should be wholly either in one or both *Houses*; besides, they were loath to desert the *King* when he was invaded by *Forreiners*; for the *Scots* were esteemed by them as a *Forrein Nation*.

B. It is strange to me, that *England* and *Scotland* being but one Island, and their Language almost the same, and being Governed by one *King*, should be thought *Forreiners* to one another: the *Romans* were Masters of many Nations, and to oblige them the more to obey the Edicts of the Law sent unto them by the City of *Rome*, they thought fit to make them all *Romans*; and out of divers Nations as *Spain*, *Germany*, *Italy*, and *France*, to advance some that they thought worthy, even to be *Senators* of *Rome*, and to give every one of the Common People the Priviledge of the City of *Rome*, by which they were protected from the Contumelies of other Nations where they resided. Why were not the *Scotch* and *English* in like manner united unto one People?

A. King *James* at his first coming to the Crown of *England* did endeavour it, but could not prevail; but for all that, I believe the *Scotch* have now as many priviledges in *England* as any Nation had in *Rome* of those which were so (as you say) made *Romans*; for they are all *Naturaliz'd*, and have right to buy Land in *England* to them and their Heirs.

B. 'Tis true of them that were born in *Scotland* after the time that King *James* was in possession of the *Kingdom* of *England*.

A. There be very few now that were born before. But why have they a better right that were born after, than they that were borne before?

B. Because they were born Subjects to the *King* of *England*, and the rest not.

A. Were not the rest born Subjects to King *James*? And was not he *King* of *England*?

B. Yes, but not then.

A. I understand not the subtilty of the Distinction; but upon what Law is that distinction grounded? Is there any Statute to that purpose?

B. I cannot tell, I think not, but it is grounded upon Equity.

A. I see little Equity in this, that those Nations that are bound to equal obedience to the same *King*, should not have equal Priviledges: and now seeing there be so very few born before King *James*'s coming in, what greater Priviledges had those Ingrafted *Romans* by their Naturalization in the State of *Rome*; or in the State of *England*, the *English* themselves more than the *Scotch*?

B.

B. Those *Romans*, when any of them were in *Rome*, had their voice in the making of *Laws*.

A. And the *Scotch* have their *Parliaments*, where-  
in their assent is required to the Law there made,  
which is as good : Have not many of the *Provinces*  
of *France* their several *Parliaments*, and several  
Constitutions? Yet they are all equally Natural  
Subjects to the *King of France*. And therefore for  
my part, I think they were mistaken both *English*  
and *Scotch* in calling one another Foreigners. How-  
soever that be, the *King* had a very sufficient Army  
wherewith he marched towards *Scotland*; and by  
that time he was come to *York*, the *Scotch* Army  
was drawn up to the Frontiers, and ready to march  
into *England*, (which also they presently did)  
giving out all the way, that their march should be  
without damage to the Countrey, and that their  
Errand was onely to deliver a Petition to the *King*,  
for the redress of many pretended Injuries they  
had received from such of the Court, whose Coun-  
sel the *King* most followed : So they passed through  
*Northumberland* quietly, till they came to a Ford  
in the River of *Tine*, a little above *Newcastle*,  
where they found some little opposition from a  
Party of the *King's* Army, sent thither to stop  
them ; whom the *Scots* easily mastered, and as soon  
as they were over, seized upon *Newcastle*; and  
coming farther on, upon the City of *Durresme* : and  
sent to the *King* to desire a Treaty ; which was  
granted, and the Commissioners on both sides met  
at *Rippon* : the conclusion was, that all should be re-  
ferred to the *Parliament*, which the *King* should call

to meet at *Westminster* the third of *November* following, in the same year 1640. And thereupon the *King* returned to *London*.

B. So the Armies were disbanded.

A. No, The *Scotch* Army was to be defrayed by the Counties of *Northumberland* and *Duresm*, and the *King* was to pay his own till the disbanding of both should be agreed upon in *Parliament*.

B. So in effect both the Armies were maintained at the *King's* charge, and the whole Controversie to be decided by a *Parliament* almost wholly *Presbyterian*, and as partial to the *Scotch* as themselves could have wished.

A. And yet for all this, they durst not presently make War upon the *King*; there was so much yet left of Reverence to him in the Hearts of the People, as to have made them odious if they had declared what they intended: they must have some colour or other to make it be believed, that the *King* made War first upon the *Parliament*. And besides, they had not sufficiently disgraced him in Sermons and Pamphlets, nor removed from about him those they thought could best counsel him; therefore they resolved to proceed with him like skilful hunters, First to single him out by men disposed in all parts to drive him into the open field, and then in case he should not seem to turn head, to call that making a War against the *Parliament*. And first, They called in question such as had either Preached, or written, in defence of those Rights which belonging to the *Crown* they meant to usurp, and take from the *King* to themselves: whereupon

some few Writers and Preachers were imprisoned, or forced to fly : The King not protecting these, they proceeded to call in question some of the King's own Actions in his Ministers, whereof they Imprisoned some, and some went beyond Sea. And whereas certain persons having endeavoured by Book and Sermons to raise Sedition, and committed other Crimes of high Nature, had therefore been censured by the Kings Council in the *Star-Chamber*, and Imprisoned; the *Parliament* by their own Authority, to try (it seems) how the King and the People would take it (for their Persons were inconsiderable) ordered their setting at Liberty; which was accordingly done, with great Applause of the People, that flocked about them in *London* in manner of a Triumph. This being done without resistance, the Kings Right to Ship-money —

B. Ship-money ! What's that ?

A. The *Kings* of *England*, for the defence of the Sea, had power to Tax all the Counties of *England*, whether they were Maritime or not, for the Building and furnishing of Ships; which tax the *King* had then lately found cause to impose, and the *Parliament* exclaimed against it as an oppression: and one of their Members, that had been Taxed but 20 shillings (mark the Oppression, a *Parliament-man* of 500 lb. a year Land, Taxed at 20 shillings) they were forced to bring it to a Tryal at Law, he refusing payment; and he was cast again: When all the Judges of *Westminster* were demanded their Opinions concerning the legality of it, of Twelve that there are, it was judged Legal by  
Ten ;



Ten; for which though they were not punished, yet they were afflicted by the *Parliament*.

B. What did the *Parliament* mean when they did exclaim against it as illegal? Did they mean it was against *Statute-Law*, or against the Judgments of Lawyers given heretofore, which are commonly called *Reports*? or did they mean it was against *Equity*, which I take to be the same with the *Law of Nature*?

A. It is a hard matter, or rather Impossible to know what other Men mean, especially, if they be crafty: but sure I am, *Equity* was not their Ground for their pretence of Immunity from Contributing to the *King* but at their own pleasure: for when they have laid the Burthen of defending the whole *Kingdom*, and Governing it, upon any person whatsoever, there is little *Equity* he should depend on others for the means of performing it; or if he do, they are his Sovereign, not he theirs. And as for the *Common Laws*, contained in *Reports*, they have no force but what the *King* gives them: besides, it were unreasonable that a corrupt or foolish Judge's unjust Sentence should by any time, how long soever, obtain the authority and force of a Law. But amongst the *Statute-Laws* there is one called *Magna Charta*, or *The great Charter of the Liberties of English men*, in which there is one Article that no man shall be distrained, that is, have his Goods taken from him, otherwise than by the Law of the Land.

B. Is not that a sufficient ground for their purpose?

*A.* No, that leaves us in the same doubt which you think it clears; for, where was the Law of the Land then? Did they mean another *Magna Charta*, that was made by some *King* more ancient yet? No, that Statute was made not to exempt any man from Payments to the Publick, but for securing of every man from such as abused the *King's* Power, by surreptitious obtaining of the *King's* Warrants, to the oppressing of those against whom he had any Suit in Law: But it was conducing to the ends of some rebellious Spirits in this Parliament, to have it interpreted in the wrong sence; and suitable enough to the understanding of the rest, or most part of them, to let it pass.

*B.* You make the Members of that *Parliament* very simple men, and yet the People chose them for the wisest of the Land.

*A.* If Craft be Wisdom they were wise enough; but *Wise*, as I define it, is he that knows how to bring his business to pass, without the assistance of Knavery and ignoble Shifts, by the sole strength of his good Contrivance; a Fool may win from a better Gamester, by the advantage of false Dice, and Packing of Cards.

*B.* According to your definition, there be few wise men now adays, such Wisdom is a kinde of Gallantry that few are brought up to; and most think Folly, fine Cloaths, great Feathers, Civility towards men that will not swallow Injuries, and Injury towards them that will, is the present Gallantry. But when the *Parliament* afterwards having gotten the Power into their hands, levied Money to their own use, What said the People to that? *A.*

A. What else, but that it was legal, and to be paid, as being Imposed by consent of *Parliament*?

B. I have heard often that they ought to pay what was imposed by consent of *Parliament* to the use of the *King*, but to their own use, never before; I see by this, it is easier to gull the Multitude than any one man amongst them: for what one man that has his Natural Judgment depraved by accident, could be so easily couzened in a matter that concerns his Purse, had he not been passionately carried away by the rest to change of Government, or rather to a Liberty of every one to Govern himself?

A. Judge then what kinde of Men such a Multitude of ignorant People were like to Elect for the *Burgeses* and *Knights* of *Shires*.

B. I can make no other Judgment, but that they who were then Elected, were just such as had been Elected for former *Parliaments*, and as are like to be Elected for *Parliaments* to come: for the Common People have been, and always will be ignorant of their Duty to the Publick, as never meditating any thing, but their particular Interest; in other things following their immediate Leaders, which are either the Preachers, or the most potent of the Gentlemen that dwell amongst them; as Common Souldiers for the most part follow their Captains, if they like them: If you think the late Miseries have made them wiser, that will quickly be forgot, and then we shall be no wiser than we were.

A. Why may not Men be taught their Duty? that is, the Science of Just and Unjust, as divers

other Sciences have been taught, from true Principles and Demonstrations? And much more easily than any of those *Preachers* and *Democratical* Gent. could *Rebellion* and *Treason*.

B. But who can teach what none have learned? Or if any Man hath been so singular, as to have studied the Science of Justice and Equity, how can he teach it safely, when it is against the Interest of those that are in possession of the Power to hurt him?

A. The Rules of the Just and Unjust sufficiently demonstrated, and from Principles evident to the meanest capacity, have not been wanting; and notwithstanding the obscurity of their Author, have shined not only in this, but in foreign Countries, to men of good Education; but they are few in respect of the rest of men, whereof many cannot read, many though they can, have no leisure; and of them that have leisure, the greatest part have their minds wholly imployed and taken up by their private businesses or pleasures: so that 'tis impossible that the Multitude should ever learn their Duty but from the Pulpit, and upon *Holy-days*; but then, and from thence it is, that they learned their Disobedience; and therefore the light of that Doctrine has been hitherto covered and kept under; hereby a cloud of Adversaries, which no private man's reputation can break through, without the Authority of the *Universities*; but from the *Universities* came all those *Preachers* that taught the contrary. The *Universities* have been to this Nation, as the *Wooden-Horse* was to the *Trojans*.

B. Can you tell me why and when the *Universities* here first began?

A. It

A. It seems, for the time, they began in the Reign of the Emperour *Charles* the Great; before which time I doubt not but there were many *Grammar-Schools* for the *Latine* Tongue, which was the Natural Language of the *Roman-Church*; but for *Universities*, that is to say, Schools for the Sciences in general, and especially for *Divinity*, it is manifest, that the Institution of them was recommended by the *Pope's* Letter to the Emperour *Charles* the Great, and recommended farther, by a Council held in his time, I think, at *Chal. sur Saone*; and not long after was erected an *University* at *Paris*, and the *Colledge* called *University-Colledge* at *Oxford*; and so by degrees several *Bishops*, *Noblemen*, and rich Men, and some *Kings* and *Queens* contributing thereunto, the *Universities* at last obtained their present Splendor.

B. But what was the *Popes* designe in it?

A. What other designe was he like to have, but what you heard before? The advancement of his own Authority in the Countreys where the *Universities* were erected? There they learned to Dispute for him, and with unintelligible Distinctions to blinde mens Eyes, whilst they encroached upon the Rights of *Kings*; and it was an evident Argument of that Designe, that they fell in hand with the work so quickly; for the first Rector of the *University* of *Paris*, as I have read somewhere, was *Peter Lombard*, who first brought into them the Learning called *School-Divinity*, and was seconded by *John Scot* of *Duns*, who lived in or near the same time, whom any Ingenious Reader,

not knowing what was the design, would judge to have been the most egregious Blockhead in the world; so obscure and senseless are their Writings: And from these the School-men that succeeded learnt the trick of Imposing what they list upon their Readers, and declining the force of true Reason by verbal Forks; I mean distinctions, that signifie nothing, but serve only to astonish the multitude of ignorant men: as for the understanding Readers, they were so few, that these new sublime Doctors cared not what they thought: these School-men were to make good all the Articles of Faith which the *Pope* from time to time should command to be believed: Amongst which there were very many inconsistent with the Rights of *Kings*, and other Civil *Sovereigns*, as asserting to the *Pope* all Authority whatsoever they should declare to be necessary *in ordine ad Spiritualia*, (that is to say) *In order to Religion*.

From the *Universities* also it was that Preachers proceeded, and were poured out into City and Country to terrifie the People into an absolute Obedience to the *Pope's Canons and Commands*; which for fear of weakening *Kings* and *Princes* too much, they durst not yet call them *Laws*.

From the *Universities* it was that the Philosophy of *Aristotle* was made an ingredient to Religion, as serving for a Salve to a great many absurd Articles concerning the Nature of Christs Body, and the State of Angels and Saints in Heaven: which Articles they thought fit to have believ'd, because they bring some of them profit, and others Reverence to  
the

the Clergy, even to the meanest of them; for when they shall have made the People believe that the meanest of them can make the Body of Christ, who is there that will not both shew them Reverence, and be Liberal to them or to the Church, especially in the time of their sickness, when they think they make and bring to them their Saviour?

B. But what advantage to them in these Impostures was the Doctrine of *Aristotle*?

A. They have made more use of his Obscurity than his Doctrine: for none of the Ancient Philosophers Writings are Comparable to those of *Aristotle*, for their aptness to puzzle and entangle men with words, and to breed Disputation; which must at last be ended in the Determination of the Church of *Rome*. And in the Doctrine of *Aristotle* they made use of many Points. As First, the Doctrine of separated Essences.

B. What are separated Essences?

A. Separated Beings.

B. Separated from what?

A. From every thing that is.

B. I cannot understand the Being of any thing, which I understand not to Be: But what can they make of that?

A. Very much in Questions concerning the Nature of God, and concerning the Estate of Mans Soul after Death, in Heaven, Hell, and Purgatory; by which you and every Man knows how great Obedience, and how much money they gain from the Common People: whereas *Aristotle* holdeth the Soul of Man to be the first giver of Motion to

the Body, and consequently to it self, they make use of that in the Doctrine of Free-Will : what and how they gain by that, I will not say.

He holdeth forth, that there be many things that come to pass in this World, from no necessity of Causes, but meer Contingency, casualty, and Fortune.

B. Methinks in this they make God stand Idle, and to be a meer Spectator in the Games of Fortune ; for what God is the cause of, must needs come to pass ; and in my Opinion, nothing else : but because there must be some Ground for Justice of the Eternal Torments of the Damned , perhaps it is this, That Mens Wills and Propensions are not (they think) in the hands of God, but of themselves. And in this also I see something conducing to the Authority of the Church.

A. This is not much, nor was *Aristotle* of such Credit with them, but that when his Opinion was against theirs, they could slight him ; whatsoever he says is impossible in Nature, they can prove well enough to be possible from the Almighty Power of God, who can make Bodies to be in one and the self-same place, and one Body to be in many Places at the same time , if the Doctrine of Transubstantiation require it, though *Aristotle* deny it. I like not the Design of drawing Religion into an Art, whereas it ought to be a Law ; and though not the same in all Countries, yet in every Country indisputable : nor that they teach it not as Arts ought to be taught, by shewing first the meaning of their Terms, and then deriving from them the truth they would have us believe. Nor that their

Terms



Terms are for the most part unintelligible : though to make it seem rather want of Learning in the Reader, than want of fair dealing in themselves, they are for the most part *Latin* and *Greek* words wryed a little the point towards the native Languages of the several Countries where they are used. But that which is most intolerable is, That all Clerks are forced to make as if they believe them, if they mean to have any Church-Preferment, the Keys whereof are in the Popes Hands ; and the Common People, whatsoever they believe of those subtile Doctrines, are never esteemed better Sons of the Church for their Learning. There is but one way there to Salvation, that is, Extraordinary Devotion, and Liberality to the Church, and readiness for the Churches sake, if it be required, to fight against their Natural and Lawful Sovereigns.

B. I see what use they make of *Aristotles Logick*, *Physicks* and *Metaphysicks* : But I see not yet how his *Politicks* can serve their turn.

A. Nor I : It has (I think) done them no Good, though it has done us here much hurt by Accident ; for men grown weary at last of the Insolence of the Priests, and examining the Truth of those Doctrines that were put upon them, began to search the sense of the Scriptures as they are in the Learned Languages ; and consequently Studying *Greek* and *Latin*, became acquainted with the Democratical Principles of *Aristotle* and *Cicero* ; and from the Love of their Eloquence, fell in Love with their Politicks, and that more and more, till it grew into the Rebellion we now talk of, without any

any other advantage to the *Roman Church*, but that it was a weakening to us, whom since we broke out of their Net in the time of *Henry 8.* they have continually endeavoured to recover.

B. What have they got by teaching of *Aristotles Ethicks*?

A. It is some advantage to them, that neither the Morals of *Aristotle*, nor of any other, have done them any harm, nor us any good. Their Doctrines have caused a great deal of dispute concerning Vertue and Vice, but no knowledge of what they are, nor any method of attaining Vertue, nor of avoiding Vice.

. The end of Moral Philosophy, is to teach Men of all sorts their Duty, both to the Publick, and to one another. They estimate Vertue partly by a Mediocrity of the Passions of Men, and partly by that that they are praised; whereas it is not the much or little praise that makes an Action Vertuous, but the Cause; nor much or little blame that makes an Action Vitious, but its being unconformable to the Laws, in such men as are subject to the Law; or its being unconformable to Equity or Charity, in all Men whatsoever.

B. It seems you make a difference between the *Ethicks* of *Subjects*, and the *Ethicks* of *Sovereigns*.

A. So I do: The Vertue of a *Subject* is comprehended wholly in obedience to the Laws of the Commonwealth. To obey the Laws is Justice and Equity, which is the Law of Nature; and consequently, is Civil Law in all Nations of the World; and nothing is Injustice or Iniquity, otherwise than

it

it is against the Law: likewise to obey the Law is the Prudence of a *Subject*; for without such obedience, the Commonwealth (which is every *Subject's* Safety and Protection) cannot subsist. And though it be Prudence also in private men, justly and moderately to enrich themselves; yet craftily to withhold from the Publick, or defraud it of such part of the Wealth as is by Law required, is no sign of Prudence, but of want of knowledge of what is necessary for their own defence.

The Vertues of Sovereigns are such as tend to the maintenance of Peace at Home, and to the Resistance of Forreign Enemies. Fortitude is a Royal Vertue; and though it be necessary in such private men as shall be Souldiers, yet for other men, the less they dare, the better it is, both for the Commonwealth, and for themselves. Frugality (though perhaps you will think it strange) is also a Royal Vertue, for it increases the publick stock, which cannot be too great for the publick Use, nor any man too sparing of what he has in trust for the good of others. Liberality also is a Royal Vertue; for the Commonwealth cannot be well serv'd without Extraordinary Diligence and Service of Ministers, and great Fidelity to their Sovereign, who ought therefore to be encouraged, and especially those that do him service in the Wars. In sum, all Actions or Habits are to be esteemed Good or Evil, by their Causes and Usefulness in reference to the Commonwealth, and not by their *Mediocrity*, nor by their being Commended; for several men praise several Customes, and that

## The History of the

that which is Vertue with one, is blam'd by others; and contrarily, what one calls Vice, another calls Vertue, as their present Affections lead them.

*B.* Methinks you should have placed amongst the Vertues, that which in my Opinion is the greatest of all Vertues, *Religion*.

*A.* So I have, though it seems you did not observe it: But whither do we digress from the way we were in?

*B.* I think you have not digressed at all: for I suppose your purpose was to acquaint me with the History, not so much of those Actions that past in the time of the late Troubles, as of their Causes, and of the Counsels and Artificers by which they were brought to pass. There be divers men that have written the History, out of whom I might have Learned what they did, and somewhat also of the Contrivance; but I find little in them of it. I would ask therefore; since you were pleased to enter into this Discourse at my request, be pleased also to inform me after my own Method. And for the danger of Confusion that may arise from that, I will take care to bring you back to the place from whence I drew you, for I well remember where it was.

*A.* Well then, to your Question concerning Religion: inasmuch as I told you, that Vertue is comprehended in obedience to the Laws of the Commonwealth, whereof Religion is one, I have placed Religion amongst the Vertues.

*B.* Is Religion then the Law of a Commonwealth?

*A.* There is no Nation in the World, whose Religion

Religion is not established, and receives not its Authority from the Laws of that Nation. It is true, that the Law of God receives no obedience from the Laws of Men: but because men can never by their own Wisdom come to the knowledge of what God hath spoken and commanded to be observed, nor be obliged to obey the Laws whose Author they know not; they are to acquiesce in some humane Authority or other: So that the Question will be, Whether a man ought in matter of Religion, (that is to say) when there is question of his Duty to God and the King, to rely upon the Preaching of their Fellow-Subjects, or of a Stranger, or upon the Voice of the Law?

B. There is no great difficulty in that point, for there is none that Preach here, or any where else, at least ought to Preach, but such as have Authority so to do, from him or them that have the Sovereign Power: So that if the King give us leave, you or I may as lawfully Preach as them that do; and I believe we should perform that Office a great deal better than they that Preached us into Rebellion.

A. The Church-Morals are in many points very different from these that I have here set down for the Doctrine of *Vertue* and *Vice*, and yet without any conformity with that of *Aristotle*: for in the *Church of Rome*, the principal Vertues are to obey their Doctrine, though it be Treason; and that is to be Religious, to be beneficial to the *Clergy*, that is their Piety and Liberality, and to believe upon their word, that which a man knows in his Conscience to be false, which is the Faith that they

require: I could name a great many more such Points of their Morals, but that I know you know them already, being so well versed in the cases of Conscience written by their School-men, who measure the goodness and wickedness of all Actions by their Congruity with the Doctrine of the *Roman Clergy*.

B. But what is the *Moral Philosophy* of the *Protestant Clergy* in *England*?

A. So much as they shew of it in their Life and Conversation, is for the most part very good, and of very good example, much better than their Writings.

B. It happens many times that men live honestly for fear, who if they had power, would live according to their own Opinions; that is, if their Opinions be not right, unrighteously.

A. Do the *Clergy* in *England* pretend as the *Pope* does, or as the *Presbyterians* do, to have a right from God immediately to Govern the *King* and his *Subjects* in all points of Religion and Manners? if they do, you cannot doubt but that if they had Number and Strength (which they are never like to have) they would attempt to attain that Power, as the others have done.

B. I would be glad to see a *System* of the present Morals written by some Divine of good Reputation and Learning, and of the late *King's* Party.

A. I think I can recommend unto you the best that is extant, and such a one as (except a few passages that I dislike) is very well worth your read-

reading: the Title of it is, *The whole Duty of Man, laid down in a plain and familiar way.* And yet I dare say, that if the Presbyterian Ministers, even those of them that were the most diligent Preachers of the late *Sedition*, were to be tryed by it, they would go near to be found *Not Guilty.* He has divided the *Duty of Man* into three great Branches: *His Duty to God, to Himself, and to his Neighbour.* In his *Duty to God*, he puts the acknowledgment of him in his *Essence* and his *Attributes*, and in believing of his *Word.* His *Attributes* are *Omnipotence, Omniscience, Infiniteness, Justice, Truth, Mercy,* and all the rest that are found in *Scripture*; which of these did not those Seditious Preachers acknowledge equally with the best of *Christians*? The Word of God are the Books of *Holy Scripture* received for *Canonical* in *England.*

B. They received the Word of God, but 'tis according to their own Interpretation.

A. According to whose Interpretation was it received by the Bishops and the rest of the Loyal Party but their own? He puts for another *Duty* Obedience, and Submission to God's Will. Did any of them, nay, did any man living, do any thing, at any time, against God's Will?

B. By God's Will I suppose he means there, his revealed Will (that is to say) his Commandments, which I am sure they did most horribly break, both by their Preaching and otherwise.

A. As for their Actions, there is no doubt but all Men are guilty enough (if God deal severely with them) to be damned: and for their Preaching, they

they will say, they thought it agreeable to God's revealed Will in the Scriptures : if they thought it so, it was not Disobedience, but Errour ; and how can any man prove they thought otherwise ?

*B. Hypocrisie* hath this great Prerogative above other Sins , that it cannot be accused.

*A.* Another *Duty* he sets down is, to Honour him in his House, that is, the *Church*, in his Possessions, in his Day, in his Word and Sacraments.

*B.* They perform this Duty (I think) as well as any other Ministers, I mean the Loyal Party ; and the *Presbyterians* have always had an equal care to have God's House free from profanation ; to have Tythes duely paid, to have the Sabbath-day kept Holy, the Word Preached, and the Lord's Supper and Baptism duely Administred. But is not the keeping of the Feasts and of the Fasts one of those Duties that belong to the honour of God ? If it be, the *Presbyterians* fail in that.

*A.* Why so ? They kept some Holy-Days, and they had Fasts among themselves, though not upon the same Days that the Church Ordains, but when they thought fit ; as when it pleased God to give the King any notable Defeat : and they govern'd themselves in this point by the Holy Scriptures, as they pretend to be ; and can prove they did not believe so.

*B.* Let us pass over all other *Duties*, and come to that Duty which we owe to the King, and consider, Whether the Doctrine taught by these Divines which adhered to the King be such, in that point, as may justify the *Presbyterians* that incited the  
People



People to Rebellion ; for that's the thing you call in Question.

*A.* Concerning our Duty to our Rulers, he hath these words : An Obedience we must pay either Active or Passive; the Active in the Case of all lawful Commands, that is, whenever the Magistrate commands something which is not contrary to some Command of God, we are then bound to act according to that Command of the Magistrate, to do the thing he requires : But when he enjoyns any thing contrary to what God hath commanded, we are not then to pay him this Active Obedience; we may, nay we must refuse thus to Act, (yet here we must be very well assured, that the thing is so contrary, and not pretend Conscience for a Cloak of Stubborness) we are in that case to obey God rather than men ; but even this is a season for the Passive Obedience, we must patiently suffer what he inflicts on us for such refusal ; and not, to secure our selves, rise up against him.

*B.* What is there in this to give colour to the late Rebellion ?

*A.* They will say, they did it in obedience to God, inasmuch as they did believe it was according to the Scripture, out of which they will bring perhaps Examples of *David* and his Adherents, that resisted King *Saul*; and of the Prophets afterwards, that vehemently from time to time Preached against the Idolatrous Kings of *Israel* and *Judah*. *Saul* was their lawful King, and yet they paid him neither Active nor Passive Obedience: For they did put themselves into a posture of defence against

against him, though *David* himself spared his Person; and so did the *Presbyterians* put into their Commission to their *General*, that they should spare the *Kings Person*. Besides, you cannot doubt, but that they who in the *Pulpit* did animate the *People* to take Arms in defence of the then *Parliament*, alledged Scripture, that is, the *word* of God for it: if it be lawful then for Subjects to resist the King, when he commands any thing against the Scripture, that is, contrary to the command of God, and to be Judge of the meaning of the Scripture, it is impossible that the Life of any King, or the Peace of any Christian Kingdom can be long secure: It is this Doctrine that divides a Kingdom within it self, whatsoever the Men be, Loyal or Rebels, that Write or Preach it publickly: And thus you see, that if those seditious Ministers be tryed by this Doctrine, they will come off well enough.

*B.* I see it, and wonder at people, that having never spoken with God Almighty, nor knowing one more than another, what he hath said, when the Laws and the Preacher disagree, should so keenly follow the Minister, for the most part an ignorant, though a ready-tongu'd Scholar, rather than the Laws that were made by the King, with the consent of the Peers and Commons of the Land.

*A.* Let us examine his words a little nearer; first concerning passive Obedience: when a Thief hath broken the Laws, and according to the Law is therefore executed, can any Man understand that this suffering of his is an obedience to the Law? Every Law is a Command to do or to forbear: neither

neither of these is fulfilled by suffering. If any suffering can be called Obedience, it must be such as is voluntary; for no involuntary Action can be counted a submission to the Law. He that means that his suffering should be taken for obedience, must not onely not resist, but also not fly, nor hide himself to avoid his punishment. And who is there among them that discourfes of passive obedience, when his life is in extream danger, that will voluntarily present himself to the Officers of Justice? Do not we see that all men when they are led to Execution, are both bound and guarded, and would break loose if they could, and get away? Such is their passive Obedience. Christ saith, *The Scribes and Pharisees sate in Moses Chair, all therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, that observe and do,* Mat. 23. 3. which is a doing an active Obedience; and yet the *Scribes and Pharisees* appear not by the Scripture to have been such Godly men, as never to command any thing against the Revealed will of God.

**B.** Must Tyrants also be obeyed in every thing actively? or is there nothing wherein a Lawful Kings Commands may be disobeyed? what if he should command me with my own hands to Execute my Father, in case he should be Condemned to dye by the Law?

**A.** This is a case that need not be put; we never have read nor heard of any King or Tyrant so inhumane as to command it; if any did, we are to consider, whether that Command were one of his Laws: for by disobeying Kings, we mean diso-

disobeying his Laws, those his Laws that were made before they were applyed to any particular person: for the *King* though as a Father of Children, and a Master of domestick Servants, yet commands the people in general, never but by a precedent Law, and as a publick, not a natural person; and if such a command as you speak of were contrived into a general Law, (which never was nor never will be) you were bound to obey it; unless you depart the Kingdom after the publication of the Law, and before the Condemnation of your Father.

*B.* Your Author says farther, in refusing Active Obedience to the *King*, that Commanded any thing contrary to God's Law, we must be very well assured that the thing is so contrary. I would fain know, how is it possible to be assured?

*A.* I think you do not believe, that any of those Refusers do immediately from God's own Mouth receive any Command contrary to the Command of the King, who is God's Lieutenant, nor any other way than you and I do; that is to say, than by the Scriptures: and because Men do for the most part rather draw the Scripture to their own sense, than follow the true sense of the Scripture, there is no other way to know certainly, and in all Cases, what God Commands or Forbids us to do, but by the Sentence of him, or them, that are constituted by the King to determine the sense of the Scriptures, upon hearing of the particular Case of Conscience which is in question: And they that are so constituted, are easily known in

all

all *Christian Commonwealths*, whether they be *Bishops*, or *Ministers*, or *Assemblies*, that govern the *Church* under him or them that have the *Sovereign Power*.

B. Some Doubts may be raised from this that you now say: For if Men be to learn their Duty from the sentence which other men shall give concerning the meaning of the *Scriptures*, and not from their own Interpretation; I understand not to what end they were Translated into *English*, and every man not only permitted, but also exhorted, to read them: For what could that produce but diversity of *Opinion*, and consequently (as man's nature is) *Disputation*, breach of *Charity*, *Disobedience*, and at last *Rebellion*? Again, since the *Scriptures* were allowed to be read in *English*, Why were not the Translations such, as might make all that's read understood, even by mean Capacities? Did not the *Jews*, such as could read, understand their *Law* in the *Jewish* Language, as well as we do our *Statute-Laws* in *English*? And as for such places of the *Scripture* as had nothing of the Nature of a *Law*, it was nothing to the Duty of the *Jews*, whether they were understood or not, seeing nothing is punishable but the Transgression of some Law. The same question I may ask concerning the *New Testament*; for I believe that those Men, to whom the Original Language was natural, did understand sufficiently what Commands and Counsels were given them by our Saviour and his Apostles, and his immediate Disciples. Again, how will you answer that question which was put by St. Peter and

and St. *John*, Act. 4. 19. when by *Ananias* the High Priest, and others of the Council of *Jerusalem*, they were forbidden any more to teach in the Name of *Jesus*; Whether it is right in the sight of God to hearken to you more than unto God?

*A.* The case is not the same: *Peter* and *John* had seen and daily conversed with our Saviour, and by the Miracles he wrote did know he was God and consequently knew certainly that their Disobedience to the High Priests present command was just. Can any Minister now say, that he hath immediately from God's own Mouth received a Command to disobey the King, or know otherwise than by the Scripture, that any Command of the King that hath the form and nature of a Law, is against the Law of God, which in divers places he directly and evidently Commandeth to obey him in all things? The Text you cite doth not tell us that a Minister's Authority, rather than a Christian King's, shall decide the questions that arise from the different Interpretations of the Scripture. And therefore, where the King is head of the Church, and by consequence (to omit that the Scripture it self was not received but by the Authority of Kings and States) chief Judge of the Rectitude of all Interpretations of the Scripture, to obey the King's Laws and publick Edicts, is not to disobey, and obey God. A Minister ought not to think that his skill in the *Latine*, *Greek*, or *Hebrew Tongues*, if he have any, gives him a privilege to impose upon all his Fellow-subjects his own sense, or what he pretends to be his sense of

every obscure place of Scripture ; nor ought he, as often as he hath found some fine Interpretation not before thought on by others, to think he had it by Inspiration as fine as he thinks it, is not false ; and then all his Stubbornness and Contumacy towards the *King* and his Law, is nothing but Pride of heart and Ambition, or else Imposture. And whereas you think it needless, or perhaps hurtful, to have the *Scriptures* in *English* , I am of another minde ; there are so many places of *Scripture* easily to be understood, that teach both true Faith and good Morality, and that as fully as is necessary to Salvation ; of which no Seducer is able to dispose the minde of any ordinary Readers that the reading of them is so profitable, as not to be forbidden without great Damage to them and the *Commonwealth*.

*B.* All that is required both in Faith and Manners for Man's Salvation, is, I confess, set down in Scripture, as plainly as can be : *Children obey your Parents in all things : Servants obey your Masters : Let all men be subject to the Higher Powers, whether it be the King, or those that are sent by him : Love God with all your Soul, and your Neighbour as your self,* are words of the *Scripture* , which are well enough understood ; but neither Children , nor the greatest part of Men do understand why it is their Duty so to do ; they see not that the Safety of the *Commonwealth*, and consequently their own, depends upon the doing of it : Every man by Nature, without Discipline, does in all his Actions look upon, as far as he can see, the Benefit that shall

D

redound

redound to himself by his Obedience, he reads that *Covetousness is the root of all Evil*; but he thinks, and sometimes findes, it is the Root of his *Estate*. And so in other Cases, the *Scripture* says one thing, and they think another; weighing the Commodities, or Incommodities, of this present Life only, which are in their sight; never putting into the Scales the Good and Evil of the Life to come, which they see not.

A. All this is no more than happens where the *Scripture* is sealed up in *Greek* and *Latine*, and the People taught the same things out of them by *Preachers*: but they that are of Condition and Age fit to examine the sence of what they read, and that take a delight in searching out the Grounds of their Duty, certainly cannot chuse but by reading of the *Scriptures*, come to such a sence of their Duty, as not only to obey the *Laws* themselves, but also to induce others to do the same; for commonly Men of Age and Quality are followed by their inferiour Neighbours, that look more upon the Example of those Men whom they reverence, and whom they are unwilling to displease, than upon Precepts and Laws.

B. These Men of the Condition and Age you speak of, are in my opinion the unfittest of all others, to be trusted with the reading of the *Scriptures*; I know you mean such as have studied the *Greek* or *Latin*, or both Tongues, and that are withal such as love Knowledge, and consequently take delight in finding out the meaning of the most hard  
 Texts,



Texts, or in thinking they have found it, in case it be new, and not found out by others: these are therefore they, that, pretermittting the easie places that teach them their Duty, fall to scanning only the Mysteries of Religion; such as are, How it may be made out with Wit, That there be Three that bear Rule in Heaven, and those Three but One? How the Deity could be made flesh? How that flesh could be really present in many places at once? Where's the place, and what the Torments of Hell, and other Metaphysical Doctrines? Whether the Will of Man be free, or govern'd by the Will of God? Whether Sanctity comes by Inspiration or Education? By whom Christ now speaks to us? Whether by the *King*, or by the Bible to every Man that reads it, and interprets it to himself; or by a private Spirit, to every private Man? These and the like Points are the study of the curious, and the cause of all our late Mischiefs; and the cause that makes the plainer sort of Men, whom the Scriptures had taught Belief in Christ, Love towards God, Obedience towards the *King*, and Sobriety of Behaviour, forget it all, and place their Religion in the disputable Doctrines of these your wise Men.

A. I do not think these Men fit to interpret the Scriptures to the rest, nor do I say that the rest ought to take their Interpretation for the Word of God. Whatsoever is necessary for them to know more, does them no good; but in case any of these unnecessary Doctrines shall be Authorized by the Laws of the *King* or other State, I say it is the

Duty of every Subject not to speak against them, inasmuch as 'tis every Man's Duty to obey him or them that have the Sovereign Power, and the Wisdome of all such Powers, to punish such as shall Publish or Teach their private Interpretations when they are contrary to the Law, and likely to incline Men to Sedition, or disputing against the Law.

B. They must punish then the most of those that have had their breeding in the *Universities*, for such curious Questions in *Divinity* are first started in the *Universities*; and so are all those Politick Questions concerning the Rights of Civil and *Ecclesiastical* Government; and there they are furnished with Arguments for Liberty, out of the Works of *Aristotle*, *Plato*, *Cicero*, *Seneca*, and out of the Histories of *Rome* and *Greece*, for their Disputation against the necessary Power of their Sovereigns; therefore I despair of any lasting Peace among our selves, till the *Universities* here shall bend and direct their Studies to the settling of it; that is, to the Teaching of Absolute Obedience to the Laws of the *King*, and to his publick Edicts under the Great Seal of *England*; for I make no doubt, but that solid Reason, backt with the Authority of so many Learned Men, will more prevail for the keeping of us in Peace within our selves, than any Victory can do over the Rebels: but I am afraid, 'tis impossible to bring the *Universities* to such a compliance with the Actions of State, as is necessary for the business; seeing the *Universities* have heretofore, from time to time, maintain'd the Authority of the Pope, contrary

to all Laws, Divine, Civil, and Natural; against the Right of our *Kings*: Why can they not as well, when they have all manner of Laws and Equity on their side, maintain the Rights of him, that is both Sovereign of the Kingdom, and Head of the Church?

B. Why then were they not in all points for the *King's* Power presently after that King *Henry* the 8th was in *Parliament* declared *Head of the Church*, as much as they were before for the Authority of the *Pope*?

A. Because the *Clergy* in the *Universities*, by whom all things there are Govern'd, and the *Clergy* without the *Universities*, as well *Bishops* as inferiour *Clerks*, did think, that the pulling down of the *Pope*, was the setting up of them (as to *England*) in his place; and made no question, the greatest part of them, but that their Spiritual Power did depend not upon the Authority of the *King*, but of *Christ* himself derived to them by successive Imposition of hands from *Bishop* to *Bishop*. Notwithstanding they knew that this derivation passed through the hands of *Popes* and *Bishops* whose Authority they had cut off; for though they were content that the Divine Right which the *Pope* pretended to in *England*, should be denied him, yet they thought it not so fit to be taken from the *Church of England*, whom they now supposed themselves to represent.

It seems they did not think it reasonable, that a Woman, or a Child, or Man, that could not construe the *Hebrew*, *Greek*, or *Latin* Bible, nor know perhaps the Declensions and Conjugations of *Greek*

or *Latin* Nouns and Verbs, should take upon him to govern so many learned *Doctōrs* in matters of Religion, meaning matters of Divinity; for Religion has been for a long time, and is now by most people taken for the same thing with Divinity, to the great advantage of the *Clergy*.

B. And especially now amongst the *Presbyterians*; for I see few that are esteemed by them very good *Christians*, besides such as can repeat their Sermons, and wrangle for them about the Interpretation of the Scripture; and fight for them also with their Bodies or Purfes, when they shall be required: to believe in Christ is nothing with them, unless you believe as they bid you. Charity is nothing with them, unless it be Charity and Liberality to them, and partaking with them in Faction. How we can have Peace, while this is our Religion, I cannot tell; *Heret lateri lethalis arundo*. The seditious Doctrine of the *Presbyterians* hath been stuck so hard in the Peoples Heads and Memories, (I cannot say into their Hearts, for they understood nothing in it, but that they may lawfully rebel) that I fear the *Common-wealth* will never be cured.

A. The two great Vertues that were severally in *Henry* the seventh, *Henry* the eighth, when they shall be jointly in one King, will easily cure it: that of *Henry* the seventh was, without much noise of the people to fill his Coffers; that of *Henry* the eighth, was an early Severity: But this without the former cannot be exercised.

B. This that you say looks (methinks) like an advice to the King to let them alone till he have gotten

gotten ready Money enough to levy and maintain a sufficient Army, and then fall on them and destroy them.

A. God forbid that so horrible, unchristian, and inhumane designe should ever enter into the Kings heart ; I would have him have Money enough readily to raise an Army able to suppress any Rebellion, and to take from the Enemies all hope of success, that they may not dare to trouble him in the Reformation of the *Universities*; but to put none to Death, without the Actual committing such Crimes as are already made Capital by the Laws. The Core of Rebellion, as you have seen by this, and read of other Rebellions, are the *Universities*; which nevertheless are not to be cast away, but to be better disciplin'd, that is to say, that the Politicks there taught be made to be (as true Politicks should be) such as are fit to make Men know, that it is their Duty to obey all Laws whatsoever, that shall be by the Authority of the King Enacted, till by the same Authority they shall be repeal'd ; such as are fit to make Men understand that the Civil Laws are God's Laws, as they that make them ; and to make Men know, that the People and the Church are one thing, and have but one Head, the *King* ; and that no Man has Title to Govern under him, that has it not from him ; that the King owes his Crown to God only, and to no Man, *Ecclesiastick* or other ; and that the Religion they teach there, be a quiet waiting for the coming again of our blessed Saviour ; and in the mean time a Resolution to obey the *King's* Laws, which are also *God's* Laws ; to in-

jure no man, to be in charity with all men, to cherish the poor and sick, and to live soberly, and free from scandal, without mingling our Religion with points of Natural Philosophy, as freedome of Will, Incorporeal substance, Everlasting News, *Ubiquities*, *Hypostases*. Which the people understand not, nor will ever care for: when the Universities shall be thus disciplined, there will come out of them from time to time, well-Principled Preachers, and they that are ill Principled, from time to time fall away.

B. I think it a very good course, and perhaps the onely one that can make our peace amongst our selves constant: for if men know not their Duty, what is there that can force them to obey the *Laws*? an Army you'll say. But what shall force the Army? were not the *Train'd Bands* an Army? Were they not the *Janisaries* that not very long ago slew *Osman* in his own Palace at *Constantinople*? I am therefore of your opinion, both that Men may be brought to a love of Obedience by Preachers and Gentlemen that imbibe good Principles in their Youth at the Universities; and also that we never shall have a lasting Peace, till the Universities themselves be in such manner (as you have said) reformed, and the Ministers know they have no Authority but what the supream Civil Power gives them; and the Nobility and Gentry know, that the Liberty of a State is not an Exemption from the Laws of their own Countrey, whether made by an Assembly, or by a Monarchy, but an Exemption from the constraint and Insolence of their Neighbours.

And

And now I am satisfied in this point, I will bring you back to the place from whence my Curiosity drew you to this long digression: we were upon the point of Ship-money; one of those grievances which the Parliament exclaimed against, as Tyranny and Arbitrary Government, thereby to single out (as you called it) the King from his Subjects, and to make a party against him, when they should need it: and now you may proceed, if it please you, to such other Artifices as they used to the same purpose.

A. I think it were better to give over here our discourse of this business, and refer it to some other day that you shall think fit.

B. Content: that day, I believe is not far off.

A. You are welcome; yet if you had stayed somewhat longer, my money would have been so much the better provided for you.

B. Nay! I pray you give me now what you have about you, for the rest I am content to take what time you please.

A. After the Parliament had made the people believe that the Extorting of Ship-money was unlawful, and the people thereby inclin'd to think it Tyrannical; in the next place, to increase their disaffection to his Majesty, they accused him of a purpose to introduce, and *Authorize* the *Roman Religion* in this Kingdom: than which nothing was more hateful to the People, not because it was *Erroneous*, (which they had neither Learning nor Judgment enough to examine) but because they had been used to hear it inveighed against in the Sermons and dis-

courses of all the Preachers whom they trusted to; and this was indeed the most effectual calumny to alienate the peoples affections from him, that could possibly be invented. The colour they had for this stand was; First, that there was one *Rosseti*, Resident (at and a little before the time) from the Pope with the Queen. And one Mr. George, Confessary to the Cardinal Francisco Barberini, Nephew to Pope Urban the Eighth, sent over under favour and protection of the Queen (as was conceived) to draw as many persons of quality about the Court, as he should be able, to reconcile themselves to the Church of Rome; with what success I cannot tell, but it is likely he gained some, especially of the weaker Sex, If I may say they were gained by him, when not his Arguments, but hope of favour from the Queen, in all probability prevailed upon them.

B. In such a Conjunction as that was, it had perhaps been better they had not been sent.

A. There was exception also taken at a *Covent* of Fryers, Capucines in *Summerset-house*, though allowed by the Articles of Marriage; and it was reported, that the Jesuits also were shortly after to be allowed a *Covent* in *Clarkenwel*; and in the mean time the Principal Secretary Sir Francis Wimbark was accused for having by his Warrant set at liberty some English Jesuits that had been taken and imprisoned for returning into England, after Banishment, contrary to the Statute, which had made it Capital: also the resort of English Catholics to the Queens Chappel, gave them colour to blame the

Queen



*Queen* herself, not only for that, but also for all the favours that had been shewn to the *Catholicks*; in-  
somuch, that some of them did not stick to say  
openly that the *King* was Governed by her.

B. Strange Injustice! The *Queen* was a *Catho-  
lick* by profession, and therefore could not  
but endeavour to do the *Catholicks* all the good  
she could, she had not else been truly that  
which she professed to be: but it seems they meant  
to force her to Hypocrisie, being Hypocrites them-  
selves. Can any man think it a crime in a Devout  
Lady (of what Sect soever) to seek Favour and  
Benediction of that *Church* whereof she is a Mem-  
ber?

A. To give the *Parliament* another Colour for  
their Accusation on foot for the *King*, as to intro-  
ducing of *Popery*, there was a great Controvertie  
between the *Episcopal* and *Presbyterian* Clergy about  
*Free-will*. The Dispute began first in the *Low-  
Countries*, between *Gomar* and *Arminius*, in the  
time of King *James*, who fore-seeing it might trou-  
ble the *Church* of England, did what he could to  
compose the difference: an Assembly of *Divines* was  
thereupon got together at *Dort*, to which also  
King *James* sent a *Divine* or two: but it came  
to nothing, the question was left undecided, and  
became a Subject to be disputed of in the *Universi-  
ties*. Here all the *Presbyterians* were of the same  
mind with *Gomar*, but a very great many others not;  
and those were called here *Arminians*, who because  
the Doctrine of *Free-will* had been exploded as *Pe-  
pistical*, and because the *Presbyterians* were far the  
grea-

greater number, and already in favour with the People, they were generally hated; it was easie therefore for the *Parliament* to make that Calumny pass currently with the People: when the *Arch-Bishop* of *Canterbury*, *Dr. Laud*, was for *Arminius*, and had a little before, by his Power Ecclesiastical, forbidden all Ministers to Preach to the People of *Predestination*; and when all Ministers that were gracious with him, and hoped for any Church-preferment, fell to Preaching and Writing for *Free-will* to the uttermost of their Power, as a proof of their Ability and Merit. Besides, they gave out some of them, that the *Arch-Bishop* was in heart a *Papist*; and in case he could effect here a Toleration of the *Roman Religion*, to have a *Cardinal's Hat*: which was not onely false, but also without any ground at all for a suspicion.

B. It is a strange thing that *Scholars*, obscure men, that could receive no Charity but from the flame of the State, should be suffered to bring their unnecessary Disputes, and together with them their Quarrels out of the *Universities* into the *Commonwealth*; and more strange, that the State should engage in their Parties, and not rather put them both to silence. A State can constrain Obedience, but convince no Errour, nor alter the Minde of them that believe they have the better Reason: Suppression of Doctrines does but unite and exasperate, that is, increase both the Malice and

and Power of them that have already believed them. But what are the Points they disagree in? Is there any Controversie between *Bishop* and *Presbyterian* concerning the *Divinity* or *Humanity* of *Christ*? Do either of them deny the *Trinity*, or any Article of the *Creed*? Does either Party Preach openly, or Write directly against *Justice*, *Charity*, *Sobriety*, or any other Duty necessary to Salvation, except only the Duty to the *King*; and not that neither, but when they had a minde either to Rule or Destroy the *King*? *Lord have mercy upon us!* Can no body be saved that understands not their Disputations? Or is there more requisite either of Faith, or Honesty, for the Salvation of one Man than another? What needs so much Preaching of Faith to us that are not *Heathens*, and that believe already all that *Christ* and his *Apostles* have told us is necessary to Salvation, and more too? Why is there so little Preaching of *Justice*? I have indeed heard *Righteousness* often recommended to the People, but I have seldome heard the word *Justice* in their Sermons: Nay, though in the *Latine* and *Greek Bible* the word *Justice* occur exceedingly often, yet in the *English* (though it be a word that every man understands, the word *Righteousness*, which few understand to signifie the same, but take it rather for *Righteousness* of Opinion, than of Action or Intention) is put in the place of it.

A. I confess, I know very few Controversies amongst *Christians*, of points necessary to Salvation; they are

are the Questions of Authority and Power over the Church, or of Profit or Honour to *Church-men*, that for the most part raise all the Controversies: For, what man is he that will trouble himself, and fall out with his Neighbours for the saving of my Soul, or the Soul of any other than himself? When the *Presbyterian Ministers*, and others, did so furiously Preach *Sedition*, and animate men to *Rebellion* in these late Wars, who was there that had not a Benefit, or having one, feared not to loose it, or some other part of his Maintinance by the alteration of the Government, that did voluntarily, without any eye to reward, Preach so earnestly against *Sedition*, as the other party Preached for it? I confess that for ought I have observed in History and other Writings of the *Heathens*, *Greek*, and *Latine*, that those *Heathens* were not at all short of us in point of Vertue and Moral Duties, notwithstanding that we have had much Preaching, and they none at all; I confess also, that considering what harm might proceed from a Liberty that Men have upon every *Sunday*, and oftner, to Harangue all the People of a Nation at one time, whilst the State is ignorant what they will say, and that there is no such thing permitted in all the World out of *Christianity*, nor therefore any Civil Wars about *Religion*; I have thought much Preaching an inconvenience: nevertheless, I cannot think that Preaching to the People the points of their Duty both to God and Man, can be too frequent, so it be done by Grave, Discreet, and Antient men that are Reverenced  
by

by the people, and not by light quibbling young men, whom no Congregation is so simple as to look to be taught by, (as being a thing contrary to Nature) or to pay them any Reverence, or to care what they say, except some few that may be delighted with their Jingling: I wish with all my heart, there were enough of such Discreet and Antient men as might suffice for all the Parishes of *England*, and that they would undertake it; but this is but a wish: I leave it to the wisdom of the *State*, to do what it pleaseth.

B. What did they next?

A. Whereas the King had sent Prisoners into Places remote from *London* three Persons, that had been condemned for publishing seditious Doctrine, some in Writing, some in publick Sermons; that *Parliament* (whether with His Majesties consent or no I have forgotten) caused them to be released, and to return to *London*; meaning, I think, to try how the people would be pleased therewith, and by consequence, how their endeavours to draw the peoples Affections from the King had already prospered. When these three came through *London*, it was a kind of Triumph, the people flocking together to behold them, and receiving them with such Acclamations, and almost Adoration, as if they had been let down from Heaven: Insomuch that the *Parliament* was now sufficiently assured of a great and tumultuous Party whensoever they should have occasion to use it; on confidence whereof, they proceeded to their next Plot, which was to deprive

prive the King of such Ministers, as by their Courage, Wisdom, and Authority they thought most able to prevent or oppose their further Designs against the King: And first, the *House of Commons* resolv'd to Impeach the Earl of *Strafford*, Lord Lieutenant of *Ireland*, of *High-Treason*.

B. What was that Earl of *Strafford* before he had that Place? And how had he offended the *Parliament*, or given them cause to think he would be their Enemy? For I have heard, that in former *Parliaments*, he had been as *Parliamentary* as any other.

A. His name was Sir *Thomas Wentworth*, a Gentleman both for birth and estate very considerable in his own Country, which was *Yorkshire*; but more considerable for his Judgment in the Publick Affairs, not only of that Country, but generally of the Kingdom, either a Burgefs, or some Burrough, or Knight of the Shire: for his *Principles of Politicks*, they were the same that were generally proceeded upon by all men else, that are thought fit to be chosen for the *Parliament*: which are commonly these, *To take for the Rule of Justice and the Government, the Judgments and Acts of former Parliaments, which are commonly called Precedents; to endeavour to keep the People from being subject to Extra-Parliamentary Taxes of money; And from being with Parliamentary Taxes too much oppressed; to preserve to the People their Liberty of Body, from the Arbitrary Power of*  
the

Cou- the King out of Parliament ; To seek Redress of Grievances.  
 nost a-  
 ns a-  
 mmons  
 Lord

B. What Grievances ?

A. The *Grievances* were commonly such as these ;  
 the Kings too much Liberality to some Favourite ;  
 The too much power of any Minister of State or  
 Officer, the Misdemeanours of Judges Civil or Spi-  
 ritual ; but especially all Unparliamentary raising of  
 Money upon the Subjects. And commonly of late,  
 till such grievances be redressed, they refuse, or at  
 least make great difficulty to furnish the King with  
 Money necessary for the most urgent occasions of  
 the Common-wealth.

B. How then can a King discharge his Duty as  
 he ought to do ; or the Subject know which of his  
 Masters he is to Obey ? For here are manifestly two  
 Powers, which when they chance to differ, cannot  
 both be Obeyed.

A. 'Tis true, but they have not often differed so  
 much to the danger of the Common-wealth, as they  
 have done in this Parliament of 1640. In all the  
 Parliaments of the late King *Charles* before the year  
 1640. my Lord of *Strafford* did appear in opposi-  
 tion to the Kings Demands, as much as any man ;  
 and was for that cause very much esteemed and  
 cried up by the people as a good Patriot , and one  
 that couragiously stood up in defence of their Li-  
 berties ; and for the same cause was so much the  
 more hated , when afterwards he endeavoured to  
 maintain the Royal and Just Authority of His Ma-  
 jesty.

B. How

B. How came he to change his mind so much it seems he did ?

A. After the Dissolution of that Parliament holden in the years 1627 and 1628, the King finding no Money to be gotten from Parliament which he was not to buy with the Blood of such Servants and Ministers as he loved best, abstained a long time from calling any more ; and had abstained longer, if the Rebellion of the *Scotch* had not forced him to it. During that Parliament the King made Sir *Thomas Wentworth* a Baron, recommended to him for his great ability, which was generally taken notice of by the disservice which he had done the King in former Parliaments, but which might be useful also for him in the times that came on ; and not long after that, he made him of the Council, and again Lieutenant of *Ireland*, which place he discharged with great satisfaction and benefit to his Majesty, and continued in that Office, till by the Envy and Violence of the Lords and Commons of that unlucky Parliament of 1640. he died, in which year he was made General of the Kings Forces against the *Scotch*, and then entred into *England*, and the year before the Earl of *Strafford*. The Pacification being made, and the Forces on both sides Disbanded, and the Parliament at *Westminster* now sitting : It was not long before the House of Commons accused him to the House of Lords of High Treason.

B. There was no great probability of his being a Trai-



much Traitor to the King, from whose favour he had received his greatness, and from whose Protection he was to expect his safety: What was the Treason they laid to his Charge?

A. Many Articles were drawn up against him, but the sum of them was contained in these two: First, that he had traiterously endeavour'd to subvert the Fundamental Laws and Government of the Realm, and instead thereof to introduce an Arbitrary and Tyrannical Government against Law. Secondly, That he had laboured to subvert the Rights of Parliaments, and the Antient course of Parliamentary Proceedings.

B. Was this done by him without the knowledge of the King?

A. No.

B. Why then if it were Treason did not the King himself call him in Question by his Attorney? What had the House of Commons to do without his Command to accuse him to the House of Lords? They might have complain'd to the King, if he had not known it before. I understand not this Law.

A. Nor I.

B. Had this been by any former Statutes made Treason?

A. Not that I ever heard of; nor do I understand that any thing can be Treason against the King, that the King hearing and knowing does not think Treason: But it was a piece of that Parliaments Artifice, to put the word Traiterously to any Article exhibited against

against a man whose life they meant to take away

B. Was there no particular instance of action or words out of which they argued that endeavour of his to subvert the fundamental Laws of Parliament whereof they accused him ?

A. Yes, they said he gave the King Council to reduce the Parliament to their duty by the *Irish Army*, which not long before my Lord of *Strafford* himself had caused to be levied there for the *Kings* service ; and it was never proved against him, that he advised the *King* to make use of it against the Parliament.

B. What are those Laws that are called fundamental ? for I understand not how one Law can be more fundamental than another, except only that Law of Nature that binds us all to obey him who-soever he be, whom lawfully and for our own safety we have promised to obey ; nor any other fundamental Law to a *King*, but *Salus Populi*, The safety and well-being of his People.

A. This Parliament in the use of these words when they accused any Man, never regarded the signification of them, but the weight they had to aggravate their accusation to the Ignorant multitude ; which think all faults heinous that are express in heinous terms : If they hate the person accused, as they did this Man, not onely for being of the *Kings* party, but also for deserting the Parliaments party as an *Apostate*.

B. I pray you also tell me what they meant by

Ar-

## Civil Wars of England.

*Arbitrary Government*, which they seemed so much to hate : Is there any Governour of a People in the World that is forced to govern them, or forced to make this and that Law whether he will or no? I think, or if any be that forces him, does certainly make Laws, and Govern *Arbitrarily*.

A. That is true, and the true meaning of the Parliament was, that not the *King* but they themselves should have the *Arbitrary Government*, not only of *England*, but of *Ireland*, and (as it appeared by the event) of *Scotland* also.

B. How the *King* came by the Government of *Scotland* and *Ireland*, by descent of his Ancestors, every body can tell; but if the *King* of *England* and his Heirs should chance (which God forbid) to fail, I cannot imagine what Title the Parliament of *England* can acquire thereby to either of those Nations.

A. Yet they say they have been conquered antiently by the *English* Subjects Money.

B. Like enough, and suitable to the rest of their Impudence.

A. Impudence in *Democratical Assemblies* does almost all that is done : 'Tis the *Goddeſs* of *Rhetorick*, and carries on proof with it; for ought ordinary Man will not from so great boldness of Affirmation, conclude there is a great probability in the *King* affirmed upon this accusation; he was brought to his Trial at *Westminster-hall* before the House of *Lords*, and found guilty: and presently after

after declared a *Traitor* by a Bill of Attainder, that is, by act of Parliament.

B. It is a strange thing that the *Lords* should be induced upon so light Grounds, to give a sentence or give their assent to a Bill so prejudicial to themselves and their posterity.

A. 'Twas not well done, and yet (as it seems) not ignorantly; for there is a clause in the Bill, that it should not be taken hereafter for an example, that is, for a prejudice in the like case hereafter.

B. That is worse than the Bill it self, and is a plain confession that their sentence was unjust: for what harm is there in the example of just sentences? besides, if hereafter the like case should happen, the Sentence is not at all made weaker by such a provision.

A. Indeed I believe that the *Lords* most of them were not willing to condemn him of Treason; they were awed to it by the Clamour of the Common people that came to *Westminster*, crying out, *Justice, Justice against the Earl of Strafford*; the which were caused to flock thither by some of the *House of Commons*, that were well assured, after the Triumphant Welcome of Prince *Burton* and *Bastwick*, to put the people into Tumult upon any occasion they desired: they were awed unto it partly also by the *House of Commons* it self, which if it desired to undo a Lord, had no more to do but to Vote him a Delinquent.

B. A Delinquent! what's that? A Sinner, is't not? Did they mean to undo all Sinners?

A.

der, that *A. By Delinquent* they meant only a Man to whom they would do all the hurt they could: but the *Lords* did not yet, I think, suspect they meant to Cashier their whole *House*.

*B. It's a strange thing* the whole *House of Lords* should not perceive the ruine of the *King's Power*, or weakening of themselves; for they could not think it likely that the People ever meant to take the *Sovereignty* from the *King* to give it to them, who were fewer in Number, and less in Power than so many *Commoners*, because less beloved by the People.

*B. But it seems not so strange to me*: for the *Lords*, for their personal abilities, as they were no less, so also they were no more Skilful in the Publick affairs than the *Knights* and *Burgessees*; for there is no reason to think, that if one that is to day a *Knight* of the Shire in the *Lower House*, be to morrow made a *Lord*, and a Member of the *Higher House*, is therefore wiser than he was before. They are all of both *Houses* prudent and able Men as any in the Land, in the business of their private Estates, which requires nothing but Diligence and Natural Wit to Govern them; but for the Government of a *Commonwealth*, neither Wit, nor Prudence, nor Diligence is enough, without infallible Rules, and the true Science of Equity and Justice.

*B. If this be true*, it is impossible any *Commonwealth* in the World, whether *Monarchy*, *Aristocracy*,

cracy, or Democracy, should continue long without Change, or Sedition tending to change either of the Government or of the Governours.

A. 'Tis true, nor have any of the greatest *Commonwealths* in the World been so long from *Sedition*: the *Greeks* had at first their petty *Kings*, and then by *Sedition* came to be petty *Commonwealths*; and the growing to be greater *Commonwealths*, by *Sedition* again became *Monarchies*, and all for want of rule of *Justice* for the Common People to take notice of which if the People had known in the beginning of every of these *Seditions*, the Ambitious person could never have had the hope to disturb their Government after it had been once settled; for Ambition can do little without hands, and few hands could have if the Common People were as diligently instructed in the true principles of their Duty, as they are terrified and amazed by Preachers with fruitless and dangerous Doctrines concerning the Nature of Man's will, and many other Philosophical points that tend not at all to the Salvation of the Soul in the World to come, nor to their ease in this life, but onely to the Discretion towards the *Clergy*, of that Duty which they ought to perform to the King.

B. For ought I see, all the States of *Christendom* will be subject to those fits of Rebellion as long as the World lasteth.

A. Like enough, and yet the fault (as have

without have said) may be easily mended by mending the  
er of the Universities.

B. How long had the *Parliament* now fate?

Common A. It began *Novemb. 3. 1640.* My Lord of  
ition: the *Strafford* was Impeached of *Treason* before the  
en by S Lords, *November 12.* sent to the *Tower*, *Nov. 22.*  
nd, the his Trial began *March 22.* and ended *April 13.*  
Seditio After his Trial he was voted guilty of *High*  
of rule *Treason* in the *House of Commons*, and after that in  
otice of the *House of Lords*, *May 6.* and on the *12 of May*  
eginnin beheaded.

person B. Great expedition! But could not the *King* for  
their Ge all that have saved him by a Pardon?

A. The *King* had heard all that passed at his  
r Ambi Trial, and had declared he was unsatisfied con-  
hands cerning the justice of their Sentence; and (I  
as dili think) notwithstanding the danger of his own  
their Du Person from the fury of the People, and that  
reacher he was counselled to give way to his *Execution*,  
cernin not onely by such as he most relied on, but also  
r Philo by the Earl of *Strafford* himself, He would have  
ation of pardoned him, if that could have preserved him  
r ease in from the Tumult raised and countenanced by  
wards th the *Parliament* it self, for the terifying of those  
perform they thought might favour him: and yet the  
King himself did not stick to confess afterwards,  
that he had done amiss in that he did not rescue  
him.

ristendon B. 'Twas an Argument of a good disposition  
long a in the *King*, but I never read that *Augustus Cæsar*  
acknowledg'd that he had done a fault in abandon-

(as hav F ing

doing *Cicero* to the fury of his Enemy *Antonius* perhaps because *Cicero*, having been of the contrary Faction to his Father, had done *Augustus* no service at all, out of favour to him, but one out of enmity to *Antonius*, and of love to the *Senate*, that is indeed out of love to himself that swayed the *Senate*, as it is very likely the *Earl of Strafford* came over to the *King's* party for his own ends having been so much against the *King* in former *Parliaments*.

A. We cannot safely judge of Men's Intentions: but I have observed often, that such as seek preferment by their Stubbornness, have misfed of their aim; and on the other side, that those Princes that with preferment are forced to buy the Obedience of their Subjects, are already, or must be soon after in a very weak condition: for in a Market where Honour is to be bought with Stubbornness, there will be as great many as able to buy as my *Lord Strafford* was.

B. You have read, that when *Hercules* fighting with the *Hydra*, had cut off any one of his many Heads, there still arose two other Heads in it's place, and yet at last he cut them off all.

A. The Story is told false, for *Hercules* at first did not cut off those Heads, but bought them off; and afterwards when he saw that did him no good, then he cut them off, and got the Victory.

B. a



B. What did they next ?

A. After the first Impeachment of the *Earl of Strafford*, the *House of Commons* upon December 18 accused the *Arch-Bishop of Canterbury* also of *High Treason*, that is, of a design to introduce Arbitrary Government, &c. For which he was (February 18.) sent to the *Tower* ; but his Tryal and Execution were deferred a long time, till January 10. 1643. for the entertainment of the *Scots*, that were come into *England* to aid the *Parliament*.

B. Why did the *Scots* think there was so much danger in the *Arch-Bishop of Canterbury* ? he was not a man of War, nor a man able to bring an Army into the Field ; but he was perhaps a very great Politician.

A. That did not appear by any remarkable events of his Councils : I never heard but he was a very honest man for his Morals, and a very zealous promoter of the Church-Government by Bishops, and that he desired to have the Service of God performed, and the House of God adorned as futable as was possible, to the honour we ought to do to the Divine Majesty. But to bring, as he did, into the State his Former Controversies, I mean his squabbles in the University about Free-Will, and his standing upon Punctilio's concerning the Service-Book and its Rubricks, was not (in my opinion) an Argument of his sufficiency in Affairs of State. About the same time they passed

B. an Act (which the King consented to) for a Tri-

ennial Parliament, wherein was Enacted, That after the present Parliament there should be a Parliament call'd by the King within the space of three years, and so from three years to three years, to meet at *Westminster* upon a certain day named in the *Act*.

B. But what if the *King* did not call it, finding it perhaps inconvenient or Hurtful to the Safety or Peace of his People, which God hath put into his Charge? for I do not well comprehend how any Sovereign can well keep a People in order when his hands are tied, or when he hath any other Obligation upon him, than the benefit of those he Governs. And at this time, for any thing you told me, they acknowledged the King for their Sovereign.

A. I know not, but such was the *Act*; And it was farther Enacted, That if the *King* did it not by his own command, then the Lord Chancellor or the Lord Keeper for the time being should send out the Writs of Summons: And if the Chancellor refused, then the Sheriffs of the several Counties of themselves, at the next *County-Courts* before the day set down for the Parliaments meeting, should proceed to the Election of the members for the said Parliament.

B. But what if the Sheriffs refused?

A. I think they were to be sworn to it; but for that and other particulars, I refer you to the *Act*.

B. To whom should they be sworn when there is no Parliament?

A. No doubt but to the *King*, whether there be a Parliament sitting or no,

B. Then, the *King* may Release them of their Oath.

A. Besides, they obtained of the *King* the putting down the *Star-Chamber*, and the High Commission Courts.

B. Besides, if the *King* upon the refusal should fall upon them in Anger, Who shall (the Parliament not sitting) Protect either the Chancellor or the Sheriffs in their Disobedience?

A. I pray you do not ask me any Reason of such things I understand no better than you: I tell you onely an Act passed to that purpose, and was signed by the *King* in the middle of *February*, a little before the Arch-Bishop was sent to the Tower. Besides this Bill, the two Houses of Parliament agreed upon another, wherein it was enacted, That the present Parliament should continue till both the Houses did consent to the Dissolution of it; which Bill also the *King* Signed the same day he Signed the Warrant for the Execution of the Earl of *Strafford*.

B. What a great Progress made the Parliament towards the end of the most seditious Members of both Houses in so little time! They fate down in *November*, and now it was *May*; in this space of time, which is but half a

year, they won from the *King* the Adherence which was due to him from his People: they drove his faithfullest Servants from him, beheaded the Earl of *Strafford*, Imprisoned the Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury*, obtained a Triennial Parliament after their Own Dissolution, and a continuance of their own sitting as long as they listed; which last amounted to a total extinction of the *Kings* Right in case that such a grant were valid; which I think it is not, unless the Sovereignty it self be in plain terms renounced; which it was not. But what money by way of Subsidie or otherwise, did they grant the *King* in recompence of all these his large concessions?

*A.* None at all, but often promised they would make him the most glorious *King* that ever was in *England*; which were words that passed well enough for welmeaning with the *Common People*.

*B.* But the Parliament was contented now: for I cannot imagine what they should desire more from the *King*, than he had now granted them.

*A.* Yes, they desired the whole and absolute Sovereignty, and to change the *Monarchical* Government into an *Oligarchy*, that is to say, to make the Parliament, consisting of a few *Lords*, and about 400 *Commoners*, absolute in the Sovereignty for the present, and shortly after to lay the house of *Lords* aside, for this was the design of the *Presbyterian Ministers*, who taking themselves to be, by Divine right, the onely Lawful govern-  
ners

nors of the *Church*, endeavoured to bring the same Form of Government into the *Civil State*; and as the Spiritual Laws were to be made by their *Synods*, so their *Civil Laws* should be made by the House of *Commons*; who, as they thought, would no less be ruled by them afterwards, than formerly they had been: Wherein they were deceived, and found themselves out-gone by their own *Disciples*, though not in Malice, yet in Wit.

B. What followed after this?

A. In *August* following, the *King* supposing he had now sufficiently obliged the Parliament to proceed no farther against him, took a journey into *Scotland*, to satisfy his Subjects there, as he had done here; intending perhaps so to gain their good wills, that in case the Parliament here should levy Arms against him; they should not be aided by the *Scots*; wherein he also was deceived, for though they seemed satisfied with what he did (whereof one thing was his giving way to the *Abolition* of *Episcopacy*), yet afterwards they made a League with the Parliament, and for money (when the *King* began to have the better of the Parliament) invaded *England* in the Parliaments Quarrel: but this was a Year or two after.

B. Before you go any farther, I desire to know the ground and original of that Right which either the House of *Lords*, or House of *Commons*, or both together, pretend to.

A. It is a question of things so long past, that

they are now forgotten; Nor have we any thing to conjecture by, but the Records of our own Nation, and some small and obscure fragments of *Roman Histories*: And for the Records, seeing they are of things only done sometimes justly, sometimes unjustly, you can never by them know what Right they had, but only what Right they pretended.

B. Howsoever, let me know what light we have in this matter from the *Roman Histories*.

A. It would be too long, and an useless digression, to cite all the Antient Authors that speak of the Forms of those *Common-wealths* which were amongst our first Ancestors, the *Saxons* and other *Germans*, and of other Nations, from whom we derive the Titles of Honour now in use in *England*; Nor will it be possible to derive from them any Arguments of Right, but only Examples of Fact, which by the Ambition of *Potent Subjects* have been oftner unjust than otherwise: and for those *Saxons* or *Angles*, that in antient times by several Invasions made themselves Masters of this Nation, they were not in themselves one Body of a *Common-wealth*, but only a League of divers Petty German *Lords* and States, such as was the *Grecian Army* in the *Trojan War*, without other Obligations, than that which proceeded from their own Fear and Weakness: Nor were these *Lords* for the most part the Sovereigns at home in their own Country, but chosen by the People, for the Captains of the Forces they brought with them.

And

And therefore it was not without Equity, that when they had conquer'd any part of the Land, and made some one of them King thereof, the rest should have greater Priviledges than the Common People and Souldiers; amongst which Priviledges, a man may easily conjecture this to be one; That they should be made acquainted, and be of Council with him that hath the Sovereignty in matters of Government, and have the Greatest and most Honourable Offices, both in Peace and War: But because there can be no Government, where there is more than one Sovereign, it cannot be inferr'd, that they had a Right to oppose the King's resolutions by force, nor to enjoy those Honours and Places longer than they should continue good Subjects. And we finde that the Kings of *England* did upon every great occasion call them together, by the name of Discreet and Wise Men of the Kingdom, and hear their Counsels, and make them Judges of all Causes, that during their Sitting were brought before them. But as he Summoned them at his own pleasure; so had he also ever at his pleasure Power to Dissolve them. The *Normans* also, that descended from the *Germans* as we did, had the same Customs in this particular; and by this means this Priviledge have the Lords to be of the King's great Council, and when they were Assembled, to be the highest of the King's Courts of Justice, continued still after the Conquest to this day. But though there be amongst the Lords, divers Names or Titles of

Honour, yet they have their Priviledge by the only name of Baron, a name received from the antient *Gauls*, amongst whom that name signified the King's Man, or rather one of his great Men: By which it seems to me, that though they gave him Counsel when he requir'd it, yet they had no Right to make War upon him if he did not follow it.

B. When began first the House of Commons to be part of the King's great Council?

A. I do not doubt, but that before the Conquest, some Discreet Men, and known to be so by the King, were called by special Writ to be of the same Council, though they were not Lords. But that is nothing to the House of Commons. The Knights of Shires and Burgeesses were never called to Parliament, for ought that I know till the beginning of *Edward* the First, or the latter end of the Reign of *Henry* the Third, immediately after the misbehaviour of the Barons; and for ought any man knows, were called on purpose to weaken the Power of the Lords, which they had so freshly abused. Before the time of *Henry* the Third, the Lords were Descended most of them from such, as in the Invasion and Conquests of the *Germans*, were Peers and fellow-Kings, till one was made King of them all and their Tenants were their Subjects, as it is at this day with the Lords of *France*. But after the time of *Henry* the Third, the Kings began to make Lords in the place of them whose Illness failed, Titularly only, without the Land belonging



longing to their Title ; and by that means their Tenants being bound no longer to serve them in the Wars, they grew every day less and less able to make a Party against the King, though they continued still to be his Great Council: And as their Power decreased, so the Power of the House of Commons increased. But I do not finde that they were part of the Kings Council at all, nor Judges over other men ; although it cannot be denied, but a King may ask their Advice, as well as the Advice of any other. But I do not finde that the end of their Summoning was to give Advice ; but only in case they had any Petitions for redress of Grievances, to be ready there with them, whilst the King had his Great Council about him.

But neither they, nor the Lords, could present to the King, as a Grievance, That the King took upon him to make the Laws, to chuse his own Privy-Council, to raise Money and Souldiers, to defend the Peace and Honour of the Kingdome, to make Captains in his Army, to make Governours of his Castles whom he pleased ; for this had been to tell the King, that it was one of their Grievances that he was King.

*B.* What did the Parliament do whilst the King was in *Scotland* ?

*A.* The King went in *August*, after which the Parliament, *September* the 8th, adjourn'd till the 20th of *October*, and the King returned about the end of *November* following, in which time the most Seditious of both Houses, and which had

had designed the Change of Government, and to cast off Monarchy, (but yet had not Wit enough to set up another Government in its place, and consequently left it to the Chance of War) made a Cabal amongst themselves, in which they projected, how by seconding one another, to Govern the House of Commons; and invented how to put the Kingdome by the Power of that House into a Rebellion, which they then called a Posture of Defence, against such Dangers from abroad, as they themselves should feign and publish. Besides, whilst the King was in *Scotland*, the *Irish* Papists got together a great Party, with an Intention to Massacre the Protestants there, and had laid a Designe for the seizing of *Dublin-Castle*, *October* the 20th, where the King's Officers of the Government of the Country made their Residence; and had effected it, had it not been Discovered the Night before. The manner of the Discovery, and the Murders they committed in the Country afterwards, I need not tell you, since the whole Story of it is extant.

B. I wonder they did not expect and provide for a Rebellion in *Ireland*, as soon as they began to quarrel with the King in *England*: For was there any body so ignorant, as not to know that the *Irish* Papists did long for a Change of Religion there, as well as the Presbyterians in *England*? Or that in general the *Irish* Nation did hate the name of Subjection to *England*, or could longer be quiet, than they feared an Ar-

my out of *England* to chastize them? What better time then could they take for their Rebellion than this, wherein they were encouraged, not only by our Weakness, caused by this Division between the King and his Parliament, but also by the Example of the Presbyterians, both of the *Scotch* and *English* Nation? But what did the Parliament do upon this occasion in the King's absence?

*A.* Nothing, but consider what use they might make of it to their own ends; partly by imputing it to the Kings evil Counsellors, and partly by occasion thereof to demand of the King the Power of pressing and Ordering of Souldiers; which Power whosoever has, has also without doubt the whole Sovereignty.

*B.* When came the King back?

*A.* He came back the 25th of *November*, and was welcomed with the Acclamations of the Common People, as much as if he had been the most beloved of the Kings before him; but found not a Reception by the Parliament answerable to it. They presently began to pick new Quarrels against him, out of every thing he said to them. *December* the second the King called together both Houses of Parliament, and then did only recommend unto them the raising of Succours for *Ireland*.

*B.* What Quarrel could they pick out of that?

*A.* None; but in order thereto, as they may pretend, they had a Bill in Agitation to assert the

the Power of Levying and Pressing Souldiers to the two Houses of the Lords and Commons; which was as much, as to take from the King the Power of the *Militia*, which is in effect the whole Sovereign Power: For he that hath the Power of Levying and Commanding of the Souldiers, hath all other Rights of Sovereignty which he shall please to claim. The King hearing of it, called the Houses of Parliament together again on *December* the 14th. and then pressed again the business of *Ireland*, as there was need; (for all this while the *Irish* were murdering the *English* in *Ireland*, and strengthening themselves against the Forces they expected to come out of *England*;) and withal told them, He took notice of the Bill in agitation for Pressing of Souldiers; and that He was content it should pass with a *Salvo Jure* both for Him and them, because the present time was unreasonable to dispute it in.

B. What was there unreasonable in this?

A. Nothing; What's unreasonable is one Question, what they quarrelled at, is another: They quarrelled at this, that His Majesty took notice of the Bill while it was in Debate in the House of Lords, before it was presented to Him in the Course of Parliament: And also that He shewed Himself displeased with those that propounded the third Bill; both which they declared to be against the Priviledges of Parliament, and Petitioned the King to give them Reparation against those by whose evil Council he was induced

induced to it, that they might receive condigne Punishment.

B. This was cruel proceeding: Do not the Kings of *England* use to sit in the Lords House when they please? And was not this Bill then in debate in the House of Lords? It is a strange thing, that a man should be lawfully in the company of men, where he must needs hear and see what they say or do; and yet must not take notice of it, so much as to the same Company; For though the King was not present at the Debate it self, yet it was lawful for any of the Lords to make him acquainted with it. Any one of the House of Commons, though not present at a Proposition, or Debate, in the House, nevertheless hearing of it from some of his Fellow-Members, may certainly, not only take notice of it, but also speak to it in the House of Commons: But to make the King give up his Friends and Councillors to them, to be put to Death, Banishment, or Imprisonment, for their good Will to him, was such a Tyranny over a King, no King ever exercised over any Subject, but in cases of Treason, or Murder; and seldome then.

A. Presently hereupon grew a kinde of War between the Peers of Parliament, and those of the Secretaries, and other able Men that were with the King. For upon the 15th of *December* they sent to the King a Paper, called a Remonstrance of the state of the Kingdome, and with it a Petition, both which they caused to be published

blished ; in the Remonstrance they complained of certain mischievous Designs of a Malignant Party, then before the beginning of the Parliament, grown ripe : And did set forth what means had been used for the preventing of it by the Wisdom of the Parliament ; what Rubs they had found therein ; what course was fit to be taken for the restoring and establishing the Antient Honour, Greatness and Safety of the Crown and Nation. And of those Designs the Promoters and Actors were, they said,

1. Jesuits and Papists.

2. The Bishops, and part of the Clergy, that cherish Formality as a support of their own Ecclesiastical Tyranny and Usurpation.

3. Counsellors and Courtiers, that for private ends (they said) had engaged themselves to further the Interests of some Forreign Princes.

*B.* It may well be that some of the Bishops, and also some of the Court may have, in pursuit of their private Interest, done something indiscreetly, and perhaps wickedly ; therefore I pray you to tell me particularly, what their Crimes were : for methinks the King should not have conniv'd at any thing against his own Supreme Authority.

*A.* The Parliament were not very keen against them that were against the King. They made no doubt, but all they did was by the King's Command, but accused thereof the Bishops, Counsellors, and Courtiers ; as being a more mannerly way of accusing the King himself, and

defa-

d of  
erty,  
nt,  
had  
Vif-  
had  
ken  
Ho-  
and  
ters

efaming him to his Subjects. For the truth is,  
ne Charge they brought againſt them was ſo ge-  
eral, as not to be called an Accuſation, but rai-  
ng. As firſt, They ſaid, they nourished Queſti-  
ns of Prerogatives and Liberty between the King  
nd his People, to the end, that ſeeming much ad-  
dicted to His Majeſties Service, they might get  
hemſelves into places of greateſt Truſt and Power  
in the Kingdom.

that  
Ec-  
vate  
far-

B. How could this be called an Accuſation, in  
which there is no Fact for any Accuſers to apply  
their proof to, or their Witneſſes? For, granting  
that theſe Queſtions of Prerogative had been mo-  
ved by them who can prove that their End was to  
gain to themſelves and Friends the Places of Truſt  
and Power in the Kingdom?

ops,  
ſuit  
in-  
pray  
mes  
ave  
eme

A. A ſecond Accuſation was, that they endea-  
voured to ſuppreſs the Purity and Power of Reli-  
gion.

B. That's Canting; it is not in Mans power to  
ſuppreſs the power of Religion.

A. They meant, that they ſuppreſt the Do-  
ctrine of the Presbyterians; that is to ſay, the ve-  
ry Foundation of their Parliaments Treacherous  
Pretenſions.

a-  
hey  
the  
ops,  
ore  
and  
efa-

A third, That they cheriſhed Arminians, Pa-  
piſts, and Libertines (by which they meant the  
common Proteſtants that meddle not with Diſ-  
putes) to the end they might compoſe a body, fit  
to act according to their Counſels and Reſolu-  
tions.

A fourth, That they endeavoured to put the  
King

King upon other courses of raising Money, than by the ordinary way of Parliaments. Judge whether these may be properly called Accusations, or not rather spiteful Reproaches of the King's Government.

*B.* Methinks this last was a very great fault for what good could there be in putting the King upon any odd course of getting Money, when the Parliament was willing to supply him as far as to the security of the Kingdom, or to the honour of the King should be necessary?

*A.* But I told you before they would give him none, but with a condition he should cut off the Heads of whom they pleased, how faithfully soever they had serv'd him; and if he would have sacrificed all his Friends to their Ambition, yet they would have found other excuses to deny him Subsidies; for they were resolved to take from him the Sovereign Power to themselves, which they could never do, without taking great care that he should have no Money at all. In the next place, they put into the Remonstrance, as faults of them whose Council the King followed, all those things which since the beginning of the King's Reign were by them mis-liked, whether faults or not, and whereof they were not able to judge for want of knowledge of the Causes and Motives that induced the King to do them, and were known only to the King himself, and such of his Privy-Council as he revealed them to.

*B.* But what were those particular pretended faults?



- than  
where  
s, or  
s Go  
fault  
King  
where  
far as  
monu  
e him  
the  
beve  
e sa  
ye  
deny  
from  
which  
care  
the  
, as  
wed  
the  
ether  
le to  
and  
were  
f his  
nded
- A. First, The Dissolution of his last Parliament at *Oxford*.  
Secondly, The Dissolution of his Second Parliament, being in the second year of his Reign.  
Thirdly, The Dissolution of his Parliament in the fourth year of his Reign.  
Fourthly, The fruitless Expedition against *Eales*.  
Fifthly, The Peace made with *Spain*, whereby the *Palatinat's* Cause was deserted, and left to chargeable and hopeless Treaties.  
Sixthly, The sending of Commissions to raise the Money by way of Loan.  
Seventhly, Raising of Ship-money.  
Eighthly, Enlargements of Forrests, contrary to *Magna Charta*.  
Ninthly, The designment of Engrossing all the Gun-powder into one hand, and keeping it in the Tower of *London*.  
Tenthly, A Design to bring in the use of Brass-Money.  
Eleventhly, The Fines, Imprisonments, Stigmatisings, Mutilations, Whippings, Pillories, Gaggs, Confinements and Banishments, by Sentence in the Court of Star-Chamber.  
Twelfthly, The Displacing of Judges.  
Thirteenthly, The Illegal Acts of Council-Table.  
Fourteenthly, The Arbitrary and Illegal Power of the Earl-Marshals Court.  
Fifteenthly, The Abuses in Chancery, Exchequer-Chamber, and of Wards.

Sixteenthly, The selling of Titles of Honour of Judges and Serjeants Places, and other Offices.

Seventeenthly, The Insolence of Bishops, and other Clerks, in Suspensions, Excommunications, and Degradations of divers painful, and learned and pious Ministers.

B. Were there any such Ministers Degraded, Deprived, or Excommunicated?

A. I cannot tell; but I remember I have heard threatned divers painful, unlearned, and Seditious Ministers.

Eighteenthly, The Excess of Severity of the High Commission-Court.

Nineteenthly, The Preaching before the King against the property of the Subject, and for the Prerogative of the King above the Law, and divers other petty quarrels they had to the Government; which though they were laid upon this Faction, yet they knew they would fall upon the King himself in the judgment of the people, to whom by Printing it was communicated.

Again, After the Dissolution of the Parliament May the fifth 1640. they find other faults; as the Dissolution it self; the Imprisoning some Members of both Houses; a forced Loan of Money attempted in *London*; the continuance of the Convocation when the Parliament was ended; and the favour shewed to Papists by Secretary *Windebank* and others.

B. All this will go currant with common people

people for Mis-government: and for faults of the King's; though some of them were Misfortunes; and both the Misfortunes and the Misgovernment (if any were) were the faults of the Parliament, who by denying to give him Money, did both frustrate his Attempts abroad, and put him upon those extraordinary ways (which they call Illegal) of raising Money at home.

A. You see what a heap of Evils they have raised to make a shew of ill-Government to the People, which they second with an enumeration of the many services they have done the King, in overcoming a great many of them, though not all, and in divers other things; and say, that though they had contracted a Debt to the *Scots* of twenty two thousand pound, and granted six Subsidies, and a Bill of Pole-money worth six Subsidies more, yet that God had so blessed the Endeavours of this Parliament, that the Kingdom was a gainer by it: and then follows the Catalogue of those good things they had done for the King and Kingdom. For the Kingdom they had done (they said) these things; They had abolished Ship-money; They had taken away Coat and Conduct-money, and other Military Charges, which they said amounted to little less than the Ship-money; That they had suppress all Monopolies, which they reckoned above a Million yearly saved by the Subject; That they had quelled Living Grievances, meaning Evil Counsellors and Actors, by the Death of my Lord *Strafford*, by the flight of

of the Chancellor *Finch*, and of Secretary *Windsor*, by the Imprisonment of the Arch-bishop of *Canterbury*, and Judges; that they had past a Bill for a Triennial Parliament, and another for the Continuance of the present Parliament, till they should think fit to Dissolve themselves.

*B.* That is to say, for ever, if they be suffered. But the sum of all those things, which they had done for the Kingdom, is, that they had left it without Government, without Strength, without Money, without Law, and without good Council.

*A.* They reckoned also putting down of the High Commission, and the abating of the Power of the Council-Table, and of the Bishops, and their Courts; the taking away of unnecessary Ceremonies in Religion; removing of Ministers from their Livings that were not of their Faction, and putting in such as were.

*B.* All this was but their own, and not the Kingdoms business.

*A.* The good they had done the King was, first, (they said) the giving of 25000 *l.* a Month for the Relief of the Northern Counties.

*B.* What need of Relief had the Northern more than the rest of the Counties of *England*?

*B.* Yes, In the Northern Counties were quartered the *Scotch* Army, which the Parliament call'd in to oppose the King; and consequently their Quarter was to be discharged.

*B.* True, but by the Parliament that call'd them in.

*A.* But

*A.* But they say no, and that this Money was given the King, because he is bound to protect his Subjects.

*B.* He is no farther bound to that, than they to give him Money wherewithal to do it. This is very great Impudence, to raise an Army against the King, and with that Army to oppress their fellow-Subjects, and then require that the King should believe them; that is to say, be at the Charge of Paying the Army that was raised to fight against him.

*B.* Nay farther, they put to the Kings Accompts the 30000 *l.* given to the *Scots*, without which they would not have Invaded *England*; besides many other things that I now remember not.

*B.* I did not think there had been so great Impudence and Villany in Mankind.

*A.* You have not observ'd the world long enough to see all that's ill: Such was their Remembrance, as I have told you; with it they sent a Petition containing three points.

First, That His Majesty would deprive the Bishops of their Votes in Parliament, and remove such Oppressions in Religion, Church-Government and Discipline, as they had brought in.

Secondly, That he would remove from his Council all such as should promote the Peoples Grievances, and Imploy in his great and publick affairs such as the Parliament should confide in.

Thirdly, That he would not give away the Lands Escheated to the Crown by the Rebellion in *Ireland*.

*B.* This

B. This last point, methinks, was not wisely put in at this time; it should have been reserved till they had subdued the Rebels, against whom there were yet no Forces sent over: 'Tis like selling the Lions Skin, before they had kill'd him. But what answer was made to the other two Propositions?

A. What answer should be made but a Denial?

About the same time the *King* himself Exhibited Articles against six persons of the Parliament, five whereof were of the House of Commons, and one of the House of Lords, accusing them of High Treason: and upon the fourth of *Jan.* went himself to the House of Commons to demand those five of them; but private notice having been given by some Treacherous person about the *King*, they had absented themselves, and by that means frustrated His Majesties intention: and after he was gone, the House making a hainous matter of it, and a High Breach of their Priviledges, adjourned themselves into *London*, there to sit as a General Committee, pretending they were not safe at *Westminster*; for the *King*, when he went to the House to demand those persons, had somewhat more attendance with him (but not otherwise armed than his servants used to be) than he ordinarily had; and would not be pacified (though the *King* did afterwards wave the prosecution of those persons) unless he would also discover to them those that gave him Counsel to go in

that

that manner to the Parliament-House, to the end they might receive condign punishment, which was the Word they used instead of Cruelty.

B. This was a harsh Demand: Was it not enough that the King should forbear his Enemies, but also that he must betray his Friends? If they thus Tyrannize over the King before they have gotten the Sovereign Power into their Hands, how will they Tyrannize over their Fellow-Subjects when they have gotten it?

A. So as they did.

B. How long staid that Committee in London?

A. Not above 2 or 3 Days, and then were brought from London to the Parliament-House by Water in great Triumph guarded with a tumultuous number of Armed Men, there to sit in security in despite of the King, and make Traiterous Acts against Him, such and as many as they listed, and under favor of these Tumults, to frighten away from the House of Peers all such as were not of their own Faction; for at this time the Rabble was so insolent, that scarce any of the Bishops durst go to the House for fear of Violence upon their Persons: insomuch that Twelve of them excused themselves of Coming thither, and by way of Petition to the King remonstrated that they were not permitted to go quietly to the Performance of that Duty, and protesting against all Determinations as of none Effect, that should pass in the House of

Lords during their forced Absence, which the House of Commons taking hold of, sent up to the Peers, one of their Members to accuse them of High Treason; whereupon Ten of them were sent to the Tower, after which time there was no more words of their High Treason, but there passed a Bill, by which they were deprived of their Votes in Parliament: And to this Bill they got the Kings assent, and in the beginning of *September*, after they Voted the Bishops should have no more to do in the Government of the Church, but to this they had not the Kings Assent, the War being now begun.

*B.* what made the Parliament so averse to Episcopacy, and especially the House of Lords, whereof the Bishops were Members: For I see no reason why they should do it to gratifie a number of poor Parish Priests that were Presbyterians, and that were never likely to serve the Lords; but on the contrary, to do their best, to pull down their power, and subject them to their Synods and Classes.

*A.* For the Lords, very few of them did perceive the intention of the Presbyterians, and besides that, they durst not, I believe, oppose the Lower House.

*B.* But why were the Lower House so earnest against them?

*A.* Because they meant to make use of their Tenets; and with pretended Sanctity, to make the King and his Party odious to the People, by whose help they were to set up *Democracy*,  
and



and Depose the King, or to let him have the Title only so long as he should Act for their purposes: But not only the Parliament, but in a manner all the People of *England*, were their Enemies upon the account of their behaviour, as being (they said) too imperious. This was all that was colourably laid to their charge; the main of the pulling them down was the Envy of the Presbyterians, that incensed the People against them, and against Episcopacy it self.

*B.* How would the Presbyterians have the Church to be Govern'd?

*A.* By National and Provincial Synods.

*B.* Is not this to make the National Assembly an Arch-Bishop, and the Provincial Assembly so many Bishops?

*A.* Yes, but every Minister shall have the delight of sharing the Government, and consequently of being able to be reveng'd on them that do not admire their Learning, and help to fill their Purses, and win to their Service them that do.

*B.* 'Tis a hard Case, that there should be two Factions to trouble the Commonwealth without any Interest of their own, other than every particular man may have; and that their Quarrels should be only about opinions; that is, about who has the most Learning, as if their Learning ought to be the Rule of Governing the whole World. What is it they are Learned in? Is it Politicks and Rules of State? I know it is called Divinity; But I hear almost nothing

preacht but matter of Philosophy; for Religion in it self admits of no Controversie; 'Tis a Law of the Kingdom, and ought not to be disputed. I do not think they pretend to speak with God, and know his will by any other way than reading the Scriptures, which we also do.

*A.* Yes, some of them do, and give themselves out for Prophets, by extraordinary Inspiration; but the rest pretend only (for their Advancement to Benefices, and charge of Souls) a greater skill in the Scriptures than other men have by reason of their breeding in the Universities, and knowledg there gotten of the Latine Tongue, and some also of the Greek and Hebrew Tongues, wherein the Scripture was written; besides their knowledge of Natural Philosophy, which is there publickly taught.

*B.* As for the Latin, Greek and Hebrew, it was once (to the Detection of the *Roman* Fraud, and to the Ejection of the Romish Power) very profitable, or rather necessary. But now that is done, and we have the Scripture in English, and Preaching in English, I see no great need of Latin, Greek and Hebrew. I should think my self better qualified by understanding well the Languages of our Neighbors, French, Dutch, and Italian. I think it was never seen in the world before the Power of Popes was set up, that Philosophy was much conducing to Power in a Common-wealth.

*A.* But Philosophy, together with Divinity, hath very much conduced to the Advancement  
of

of the Professors thereof, to places of the greatest Authority, next to the Authority of Kings themselves, in most of the Ancient Kingdoms of the world, as is manifestly to be seen in the History of those times.

*B.* I pray you cite me some of the Authors and places.

*A.* First, what were the Druids of old time in *Britany* and *France*, what Authority these had you may see in *Cesar*, *Strabo*, and others; and especially in *Diodorus Siculus*, the greatest Antiquary perhaps that ever was, who speaking of the Druids (which he calls *Sarorides*) in *France*, says thus; There be also amongst them certain Philosophers and Theologians that are exceedingly honored, whom they also use as Prophets. These men by their skill in Augury, and inspection into the Bowels of Beasts sacrificed, foretell what is to come, and have the multitude in obedience to them, and a little after. It is a custom amongst them, that no man may sacrifice without a Philosopher, because (say they) men ought not to present their Thanks to the Gods but by them that know the Divine Nature, and are as it were of the same Language with them; and that all good things ought by such as these to be prayed for.

*B.* I can hardly believe that those Druids were very skilful either in Natural Philosophy or Moral.

*A.* Nor I; for they held and taught the Transmigration of souls from one body to another,

ther, as did *Pythagoras*, which Opinion, whether they took from him, or he from them, I cannot tell. What were the *Magi* in *Persia* but Philosophers and Astrologers? You know how they came to find our Saviour by the Conduct of a Star, either from *Persia* it self, or from some Country more Eastward than *Judea*: were not these in great Authority in their Country? And are they not in most part of Christendom, thought to have been Kings? *Egypt* hath been thought by many the most antient Kingdom and Nation of the World, and their Priests had the greatest power in Civil Affairs that any Subject ever had in any Nation. And what were they but Philosophers and Divines? Concerning whom the same *Diodorus Siculus* says thus; The whole Country of *Egypt* being divided into three parts, the Body of the Priests have One as being of most credit with the People, both for their Devotion towards the Gods, and also for their Understanding gotten by Education, and presently after: for generally those men in the greatest Affairs of all the King's Counsellors, partly Executing, and partly informing and Advising; foretelling him also (by their skill in Astrology and Art in the Inspection of Sacrifices) the things that are to come; and reading to him out of their Holy Books such of the Actions there Recorded, as are profitable for him to know. 'Tis not there as in *Greece*, one man, or one woman that has

the Priest-hood, but they are many that attend the Honors and Sacrifices of the Gods, and leave the same Imployment to their posterity, which next to the King have the greatest Power and Authority: concerning the Judicature amongst the *Egyptians*, he saith thus; from out of the most Eminent Cities, *Hieropolis*, *Thebes*, and *Memphis*, they chose Judges, which are a Counsel not inferior to that of *Arcopagus* in *Athens*, or that of the Senate in *Lacedemon*; when they are met, being in number thirty, they chuse one from among themselves to be Chief Justice, and the City whereof he is, sendeth another in his place: This Chief Justice wore about his neck, hung in a Gold Chain, a Jewel of precious Stones; the name of which Jewel was Truth, which when the Chief Justice had put on, then began the Pleading, &c. And when the Judge had agreed on the Sentence, then did the Chief Justice put this Jewel of Truth to one of the Pleas. You see now what power was acquir'd in Civil matters by the Conjunction of Philosophy and Divinity: Let us come now to the Common-wealth of the *Jews*; was not the Priest-hood in a Family (namely the *Levites*) as well as the Priest-hood of *Egypt*? Did not the High Priest give Judgment by the Breast-plate of *Urim* and *Thummim*? Look upon the Kingdom of *Assyria*; and the Philosophers and *Chaldeans*; had not they Lands and Cities belonging to their Family, even in *Abraham's* time, who dwelt (you know) in *Ur* of the *Chaldeans*; of these the same

Author says thus; The *Chaldeans* are a Sect in Politicks, like to that of the *Egyptian* Priests; for being ordained for the service of the gods they spend the whole time of their life in Philosophy, being of exceeding great reputation in Astrology; and pretending much also to Prophecy, foretelling things to come by Purifications and Sacrifices; and to find out by certain Incantations the preventing of harm, and the bringing to pass of good. They have also skill in Augury, and in the Interpretation of Dreams and Wonders; nor are they unskilful in the Art of Foretelling by the Inwards of Beasts sacrificed, and have their Learning not of the Greeks; for the Philosophy of the *Chaldeans* goes to their Family by Tradition, and the Son receives it from his Father. From *Assyria* let us pass into *India*, and see what esteem the Philosophers had there. The whole Multitude (says *Diodorus*) of the *Indians*, is divided into seven parts, whereof the first is the Body of the Philosophers, for number the least, but for eminency the first; for they are free from Taxes; and as they are not Masters of others, so are no others Masters of them. By private Men they are called to the Sacrifices, and to the care of Burials of the Dead, as being thought most beloved of the gods, and skilful in the Doctrine concerning Hell; and for this Employment receive Gifts and Honors very considerable. They are also of great Use to the People of *India*, for being taken at the beginning of the year, in the great Assembly they fore-

foretel them of great Drouths, great Rains, also of Winds and of Sickneses, and of whatsoever is profitable for them to know beforehand.

The same Author concerning the Laws of the *Aethiopians*, saith thus, the Laws of the *Aethiopians* seem very different from those of other Nations; and especially about the Election of their Kings: for the Priests propound some of the Chief Men among them named in a Catalogue: and when the God (which according to a certain Custom is carried about to Feastings) does accept of him, the Multitude Elect for their King, and presently adore and honor him, as a God, put into the Government by Divine Providence. The King being chosen, he has the manner of his Life limited to him by the Laws, and does all other things according to the Custom of the Country, neither rewarding nor punishing any man otherwise than from the beginning is established amongst them by Law; nor use they to put any man to death, though he be condemn'd to it, but to send some Officer to him with a Token of Death, who seeing the Token, goes presently to his own house, and kills himself presently after. But the strangest thing of all is that which they do concerning the Death of their Kings, or the Priests that live in *Adrooe*, and spend their time about the worship and honor of the gods, and are in greatest Authority; when they have a mind to it, send a Messenger to the King to bid him dy, for that the gods have given such order, and that the

Commandments of the Immortals are not by any means to be neglected by those that are by nature Mortal, using also other speeches to him, with men of simple Judgment, that have not reason enough to dispute against those unnecessary Commands, as being educated under an old and indelible Custom, are content to admit of; therefore in former times the Kings did obey the Priests, not as mastered by force and Arms, but as having their reason mastered by superstition. But in the time of *Ptolomy* the second, *Er-gamenes*, King of the *Ethiopians*; having had his Breeding in Philosophy after the manner of the Greeks, being the first that durst dispute their power, took heart as befitted a King; came with Soldiers to a place called *Abaton*, where was then the golden Temple of the *Ethiopians*; killed all the Priests, abolished the Custom, and rectified the Kingdom according to his will.

*B.* Though they that were kill'd were most damnable Impostures, yet the Act was cruel.

*A.* It was so; But were not the Priests cruel to cause their Kings, whom a little before they adored as Gods, to make away themselves? The King kill'd them for the safety of his person; they him out of Ambition, or love of Change. The King's Act may be colored with the good of his people; the Priests had no pretence against their Kings, who were certainly very godly, or else would never have obeyed the command of the Priests by a Messenger unarmed to kill themselves. Our late King, the best  
King.



King perhaps that ever was (you know) was murdered, having been first persecuted by War at the Incitement of *Presbyterian* Ministers, who are therefore guilty of the death of all that fell in that War, which were, I believe, in *England, Scotland, and Ireland* near one hundred thousand persons. Had it not been much better, that those seditious Ministers, which were not perhaps a thousand, had been all kill'd before that they had preached? It had been (I confess) a great Massacre; but the killing of a hundred thousand is a greater.

B. I am glad the Bishops were out at this business; as ambitious as some say they are, it did not appear in that business; for they were Enemies to them that were in it.

A. But I intend not by these Quotations to commend either the Divinity, or the Philosophy of those Heathen People, but to shew only what the Reputation of those Sciences can effect among the People: For their Divinity was nothing but Idolatry, and their Philosophy (excepting the knowledge of the *Egyptian* Priests, and from them the *Chaldeans* had gotten by long Observation and Study in Astronomy, Geometry, and Arithmetick, very little, and that in great part abused in Astrology and Fortune-telling: whereas the Divinity of the Clergy of this Nation, now considered a part from the mixture that hath been introduced by the Church of *Rome*, and in part retained here) of the babbling Philosophy

Philosophy of *Aristotle*, and other Greeks, that hath no Affinity with Religion, and serves only to breed Disaffection, Dissention, and finally Sedition and Civil War (as we have lately found by dear Experience in the Differences between the Presbyterians and Episcopalians) is the true Religion. But for these Differences, both Parties as they were in Power, not only suppressed the Tenents of one another, but also whatsoever Doctrine looked with an ill aspect upon their Interest; and consequently all true Philosophy, especially Civil and Moral, which can never appear propitious to Ambition, or to an Exemption from Obedience due to the Sovereign Power.

After the King had accused the Lord *Kimbolton*, a Member of the Lords House, and *Hollis, Heselrig, Hampden, Brinn, and Stroud*, Five Members of the Lower House, of High Treason; and after the Parliament had Voted out the Bishops from the House of Peers, they pursued especially two things in their Petitions to His Majesty, the one was that the King would declare who were the persons that advised him to go as he did to the Parliament-House to apprehend them; and that he would leave them to the Parliament to receive condign punishment; and this they did to stick upon His Majesty the dishonor of Deserting his Friends, and betraying them to his Enemies: The other was, that

that he would allow a Guard out of the City of *London* to be commanded by the Earl of *Essex*; for which they pretended they could not else Sit in Safety, which pretence was nothing but an upbraiding of His Majesty for coming to Parliament, better accompanied than ordinary to Seize the said Five several Members.

B. I see no reason in petitioning for a Guard, they should determine it to the City of *London* in particular, and the Command by name to the Earl of *Essex* unless they meant the King should understand it a Guard against himself.

A. Their meaning was, that the King should understand it so, and as ( I verily believe ) they meant he should take it as an affront; and the King himself understanding it so, denied to grant it, though he were willing; if they could not otherwise be satisfied, to Command such a Guard to wait upon them, as he would be responsible for to God Almighty. Besides this, the City of *London* petition'd the King ( put upon it, no doubt, by some Members of the Lower House ) to put the *Tower of London* into the hands of persons of Trust, meaning such as the Parliament should approve of. And so appoint a Guard for the safety of His Majesty and the Parliament. This method of bringing petitions in a Tumultuary Manner by great Multitudes of Clamorous people, was ordinary with the House of Commons, whose Ambition could never have been served by way of Prayer.

Prayer and Request, without extraordinary terror.

After the King had waved the prosecution of the Five Members, but denied to make known, who had advised Him to come in person to the House of Commons, they questioned the Attorney General, who, by the King's Command, had Exhibited the Articles against them, and voted Him, *a breaker of the Priviledge of Parliament*. And no doubt had made him feel their Cruelty, if he had not speedily fled the Land.

About the end of *January*, they made an Order of both Houses of Parliament, to prevent the going over of Popish Commanders into *Ireland*; not so much fearing that, as that by this the King Himself choosing his Commanders for that Service, might aid Himself out of *Ireland* against the Parliament. But this was no great matter, in respect of a Petition they sent His Majesty about the same time, that is to say, about the Twenty seventh, or Twenty eighth of *January*, 1641. wherein they desired, in effect, the absolute Sovereignty of *England*, though by the name of Sovereignty they challeng'd it not, whilst the King was living; for to the End that the Fears and Dangers of this Kingdom might be removed, and the mischievous Designs of those who are Enemies to the Peace of it, might be prevented, they pray that His Majesty would be pleased to put forth with.

First,

First, The Tower of *London*.

Secondly, All other Forts.

Thirdly, The whole Militia of the Kingdom into the hands of such persons as should be recommended to him by both the Houses of Parliament.

And this they stile a necessary Petition.

*B.* Were there really any such Fears and Dangers generally conceived here? or did there appear any Enemies at that time with such designs as are mentioned in the Petition.

*A.* Yes, but no other fear of Dangers, but such as discreet and honest Men might justly have of the Designs of the Parliament it self, who were the greatest Enemies to the Peace of the Kingdom that could possibly be. 'Tis also worth observing, that this Petition began with these words, *Most Gracious Sovereign*; so stupid they were, as not to know, that he that is Master of the Militia, is Master of the Kingdom, and consequently is in possession of a most absolute Sovereignty. The King was now at *Windsor*, to avoid the Tumults of the Common People before the Gates at *Whitehal*, together with the Clamors and Affronts there. The Ninth of *Febr.* after, he came to *Hampton Court*, and thence went to *Dover* with the Queen, and the Princess of *Orange* his Daughter, where the Queen, with the Princess of *Orange*, embarked for *Holland*; but the King returned to *Greenwich*, whence he sent for the Prince

Prince of *Wales*, and the Duke of *York*, and so went with them towards *York*.

*B.* Did the Lords joyn with the Commons in this Petition for the Militia?

*A.* It appears so by the Title, but I believe they durst not but do it; the House of Commons took them but for a Cypher, Men of Title only, without real power, but they were very much mistaken; for the House of Commons never intended they should be sharers in it.

*B.* What Answer made the King to this Petition?

*A.* That when He shall know the Extent of Power which is intended to be established in those persons, whom they desire to be the Commanders of the Militia in the several Counties, and likewise to what time it shall be limited; that no Power shall be Executed by His Majesty alone, without the advice of Parliament, then he will declare that (for the securing them from all Dangers or Jealousies of any) then His Majesty will be content to put into all the places, both Forts and Militia in the several Counties, such Persons as both the Houses of Parliament shall either approve, or recommend unto him, so that they declare before unto His Majesty, the Names of the Persons whom they approve, or recommend, unless such Persons shall be nam'd, against whom he shall have just and unquestionable Exceptions.

contin'd

*B.* What

**B.** What Power? For what Time? And to whom did the Parliament grant concerning the Militia?

**A.** The same power which the King had before planted in his Lieutenants, and his Deputy-Lieutenants in the several Counties, and without other limitation of time, but their own pleasure.

**B.** Who were the Men that had this Power?

**A.** There is a Catalogue of them Printed, they are very many, and most of them Lords; nor is it necessary to have them nam'd, for to name them, is (in my opinion) to Brand them with the mark of Disloyalty, or of Folly. When they had made a Catalogue of them, they sent it to the King, with a new Petition for the Militia.

Also presently after they sent a Message to His Majesty, praying Him to leave the Prince at *Hampton Court*; but the King granted neither.

**B.** However it was well done of them to get Hostages (if they could) of the King, before He went from them.

**A.** In the mean time, to raise Money for the reducing of *Ireland*; the Parliament invited Men to bring in Money by way of Adventure, according to these Propositions.

First, That Two Millions, and Five hundred thousand Acres of Land in *Ireland*, should be assigned to the Adventurers in this proportion,

For an Adventure of  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} 200l. - 1000 \text{ Acres in } \textit{Ulster.} \\ 300l. - 1000 \text{ Acres in } \textit{Canaught.} \\ 450l. - 1000 \text{ Acres in } \textit{Munster.} \\ 600l. - 1000 \text{ Acres in } \textit{Lempster.} \end{array} \right.$

All according to English Measure, and consisting of Meadow, arable and profitable Pasture, Bogs, Woods, and Barren Mountains, being cast in over and above.

Secondly, A Revenue was reserv'd to the Crown, from 1*d.* to 3*d.* on every Acre.

Thirdly, That Commissions should be sent by the Parliament, to erect Mannors, settle Wastes and Commons, maintain preaching Ministers, to create Corporations, and to regulate Plantations. The rest of the Propositions concern only the times and manner of payment of the Sums subscribed by the Adventurers, and to those Propositions His Majesty assented, but to the Petition for the Militia, His Majesty denied His Assent.

B. If he had not, I should have thought it a great Wonder. What did the Parliament after this?

A. They sent him another Petition, which was presented to him when He was at *Theobalds* in his way to *York*; wherein they tell Him plainly, *That unless He be pleased to assure them by those Messengers then sent, that He would speedily apply His Royal Assent to the satisfaction of their former Desires, they shall be forc'd, for the*

*Safety*



*Safety of his Majesty and his Kingdoms, to dispose of the Militia by the Authority of both Houses. &c.*

They petitioned His Majesty also, to let the Prince stay at St. Jameses, or some other of His Majesties Houses near London. They tell Him also, *That the Power of Raising, Ordering, and Disposing of the Militia, cannot be granted to any Corporation, without the Authority and Consent of Parliament. And those parts of the Kingdom, that have put themselves into a posture of Defence, have done nothing therein, but by direction of both Houses, and what is justifiable by the Laws of this Kingdom.*

B. What answer made the King to this :

A. It was a putting of themselves into Arms, and under Officers, such as the Parliament should approve of.

Fourthly, They Voted that His Majesty should be again desir'd, that the Prince might continue about London,

Lastly, They Voted a Declaration to be sent to His Majesty by both the Houses, wherein they accuse His Majesty of a Design of altering Religion, though not directly Him, but them that counsell'd Him; whom they also accus'd of being the Inviters and Fomenters of the *Scotch* War, and Framers of the Rebellion in *Ireland*. And upbraided the King again, for accusing the Lord *Kimbolton*, and the Five Members: and of being privy to the purpose of bringing up His Army which was rais'd against the *Scots*, to be employ'd

employ'd against the Parliament. To which His Majesty replied from *Newmarket*.

Whereupon it was Resolv'd by both Houses, *That in this Case of Extreame Danger, and of His Majesties Refusal, the Ordinance agreed upon by both Houses, for the Militia, sh<sup>d</sup> oblige the People by the Fundamental Laws of this Kingdome. And also that whosoever should Execute any Power over the Militia, by colour of any Commission of Lieutenancy, without Consent of both Houses of Parliament shall be accounted a Disturber of the Peace of the Kingdom.*

Whereupon His Majesty sent a Message to both Houses from *Huntingdon*, *Requiring Obedience to the Laws Established, and Prohibiting all Subjects, upon pretence of their Ordinance, to Execute any thing concerning the Militia, which is not by those Laws warranted.*

Upon this the Parliament Votes a standing to their former Votes; as also, *That when the Lords and Commons in Parliament, which is the Supreme Court of Judicature in the Kingdom shall declare what the Law of the Land is, to have this not only questioned, but contradicted, is a high Breach of the Priviledge of Parliament.*

*B.* I thought that he that makes the Law, ought to declare what the Law is; for what is it else to make a Law, but to declare what it is; so that they have taken from the King not only the Militia, but also the Legislative Power.

*A.* They have so. But I make account the

Legislative Power (and indeed all Power possible) is contain'd in the Power of the Militia.

After this they Seize such Money as was due to His Majesty upon the Bill of Tunnage and Poundage, and upon the Bill of Subsidies, that they might disable him every way they possibly could. They sent Him also many other contumelious Messages and Petitions after His coming to York, amongst which one was, *That whereas the Lord Admiral, by Indisposition of Body, could not Command the Fleet in Person, He would be pleas'd to give Authority to the Earl of Warwick to supply his place;* when they knew the King had put Sir John Pennington in it before.

B. To what End did the King entertain so many Petitions, Messages, Declarations, and Remonstrances; and vouchsafe His Answers to them, when He could not choose but clearly see they were resolv'd to take from Him His Royal Power, and consequently His Life? For it could not stand with their safety, to let either Him or His Issue live, after they had done Him so great Injuries.

A. Besides this, the Parliament had at the same time a Committee residing at York, to spy what His Majesty did, and to inform the Parliament thereof; and also to hinder the King from gaining the People of that County to His Party: so that when His Majesty was Courting the Gentlemen there, the Committee was Instigating

gating of the Yeomanry against him; to which also the Ministers did very much contribute, so that the King lost his opportunity at *York*.

*B.* Why did not the King seize the Committee into his hand, or drive them out of his Town?

*A.* I know not; but I believe, he knew the Parliament had a greater Party than he, not only in *York-shire*, but also in *York*.

Towards the End of *April* the King, upon Petition of the people of *York-shire*, to have the Magazine of *Hull* to remain still there, for the greater security of the Northern parts, thought fit to take it into his own hands. He had a little before appointed Governor of the Town the Earl of *Newcastle*; but the Townsmen having been already corrupted by the Parliament, refused to receive him, but refus'd not to receive Sir *John Hotham*, appointed to be Governor by the Parliament. The King therefore coming before the Town, Guarded only by a few of his own Servants, and a few Gentlemen of the Country thereabouts, was deny'd Entrance by Sir *John Hotham* that stood upon the Wall; for which Act, he presently caused Sir *John Hotham* to be proclaim'd Traytor, and sent a Message to the Parliament, requiring Justice to be done upon the said *Hotham*, and that the Town and Magazine might be delivered into his hands.

To which the Parliament made no Answer, but instead thereof published another Declaration, in which was omitted nothing of their former

former Slanders against His Majesties Government, but inserted certain Propositions declarative of their own pretended Right, viz.

I. *That whatsoever they declare to be Law ought not to be question'd by the King.*

II. *That no Precedent can be Limits, to bound their Proceedings.*

III. *That a Parliament, for the publick Good, may dispose of any thing wherein the King or Subject hath a Right ; and that they without the King, are this Parliament, and the Judge of this publick Good, and that the King's consent is not necessary.*

IV. *That no Member of either House ought to be troubled for Treason, Felony, or any other Crime, unless the Cause be first brought before the Parliament, that they may judge of the Fact, and give leave to proceed, if they see Cause.*

V. *That the Sovereign Power resides in both Houses; and that the King ought to have no Negative Voice.*

VI. *That the Levying of Forces against the Personal Commands of the King, ( though accompanied with his presence ) is not Levying War against the King, but the Levying of War against his politick Person, viz. his Laws, &c.*

VII. That Treason cannot be committed against His Person, otherwise than as he is intrusted with the Kingdom, and discharges the Trust; and that they have a Power to Judge, whether he hath discharged his Trust, or not.

VIII. That they may dispose of the King when they will.

B. This is plain dealing, and without Hypocrisie; Could the City of London swallow this?

A. Yes, and more too if need be; London (you know) has a great Belly, but no Palate nor taste of Right and Wrong.

In the Parliament Roll of Henry IV. amongst the Articles of the Oath the King at his Coronation took, there is one runs thus:

*Concedes Justas Leges & Consuetudines esse tenendas, & promittes per te eas esse protegendas, & ad honorem Dei corroborandas quas vulgus elegerit.*

Which the Parliament urged for their Legislative Authority, and therefore interpret *quas vulgus elegerit*, which the People shall choose; as if the King should Swear to Protect and corroborate Laws before they were made, whether they be Good or Bad: whereas the words signify no more, but that he shall Protect and corroborate such Laws as they have chosen; that is to say, the Acts of Parliament then in being.

And

And in the Records of the Exchequer it is thus, Will you grant to hold and keep the Laws, with and rightful Customs, which the Commonalty of this that your Kingdom have? and will you defend and uphold them, &c?

And this was the Answer His Majesty made to that Point.

B. I think his Answer very full and clear; but if the words were to be interpreted in the other sense, yet I see no reason why the King should be bound to swear to them; for Henry IV. came to the Crown by the Votes of a Parliament, not much inferior in wickedness to this Long Parliament, that Deposed and Murdered their Lawful King, saying that it was not the Parliament it self, but the Usurper that murdered King Richard II.

A. About a week after, in the beginning of May, the Parliament sent the King another Paper, which they stil'd, *The Humble Petition and Advice of both Houses*: Containing Nineteen Propositions, which when you shall hear, you shall be able to judge what power they meant to leave to the King, more than to any of his Subjects. The first of them is this.

I. That the Lords, and other of His Majesties Privy Council, and all great Officers of State, both at home and abroad, be put from their employments, and from his Council, save only such as should be approved of by both Houses of Parliament; and none put into their places, but by approbation of the

*said Houses. And that all Privy-Councillors take an Oath for the due Execution of their Places, in such form as shall be agreed upon by the said Houses.*

II. *That the great Affairs of the Kingdom be Debated, Resolv'd and Transacted only in Parliament; and such as will presume to do any thing to the contrary to be reserv'd to the censure of the Parliament; and such other Matters of State as are proper for His Majesties Privy-Council, shall be Debated and Concluded by such as shall from time to time be chosen for that Place by both Houses of Parliament. And that no Publick Act concerning the Affairs of the Kingdom which are proper for his Privy-Council, be esteemed valid, as proceeding from the Royal Authority, unless it be done by the Advice and Consent of the Major part of the Council, attested under their Hands; and that the Council be not more than Five and twenty, nor less than Fifteen; and that when a Councillors place falls, it shall not be supplied, without the Assent of the Major part of the Council; and that such Choice also shall be void, if the next Parliament after confirm it not.*

III. *That the Lord High Steward of England, Lord High Constable, Lord Chancellor, or Lord Keeper of the Great Seal, Lord Treasurer, Lord Privy Seal, Earl Marshal, Lord Admiral, Warden of the Cinque Ports, Chief Governor of Ireland, Chancellor of the Exchequer, Master of the Wards, Secretaries of State, Two Chief Justices and Chief Baron, be alwayes chosen with the Approbation of both*



both Houses of Parliament ; and in the Intervals of Parliament , by the Major part of the Privy Council.

IV. That the Government of the King's Children shall be committed to such as both Houses shall approve of ; and in the Intervals of Parliament, such as the Privy Council shall approve of, that the Servants then about them, against whom the Houses have just exception, should be remov'd.

V. That no Marriage be concluded, or treated of, for any of the King's Children, without consent of Parliament.

VI. That the Laws in force against Jesuits, Priests, and Popish Recusants, be strictly put in execution.

VII. That the Votes of Popish Lords in the House of Peers be taken away ; and that a Bill be passed for the Education of the Children of Papists in the Protestant Religion.

VIII. That the King will be pleas'd to reform the Church-Government and Liturgy, in such manner as both Houses of Parliament shall advise.

IX. That he would be pleased to rest satisfied with that course the Lords and Commons have appointed for ordering the Militia, and recal his Declarations and Proclamations against it.

X. That such Members as have been put out of any Place or Office since this Parliament began, may be restor'd, or have satisfaction,

XI. That all Privy Councillors and Judges take an Oath, the form whereof shall be agreed on, and settled by Act of Parliament, for the maintaining the Petition of Right, and of certain Statutes made by the Parliament..

XII. That all the Judges and Officers placed by Approbation of both Houses of Parliament, may hold their places, quamdiu bene se gesserint.

XIII. That the Justice of Parliament may pass upon all Delinquents, whether they be within the Kingdom, or fled out of it; and that all persons cited by either House of Parliament, may appear and abide the Censure of Parliament.

XIV. That the General Pardon offered by His Majesty, be granted with such Exceptions as shall be advised by both Houses of Parliament.

B. What a Spightful Article was this? All the rest proceeded from Ambition, which many times well-natur'd men are subject to; but this proceeded from an Inhumane and Devilish cruelty.

A. XV. That the Forts and Castles be put under

## Civil Wars of England.

FOR

der the command of such Persons, as with the Approbation of the Parliament the King shall appoint.

XVI. That the extraordinary Guards about the King be discharged, and for the future none raised but according to the Law, in case of actual Rebellion or Invasion.

B. Methinks these very propositions sent to the King, are an actual Rebellion.

A. XVII. That his Majesty enter into a more strict Alliance with the United Provinces, and other Neighbor Protestant Princes and States.

XVIII. That his Majesty be pleased, by Act of Parliament, to clear the Lord Kimbolton, and the Five Members of the House of Commons, in such manner, as that future Parliaments may be secured from the consequence of evil Precedent.

XIX. That His Majesty be pleased to pass a Bill for restraining Peers, made hereafter from sitting or voting in Parliament, unless they be admitted with consent of both Houses of Parliament. These Propositions granted, they promise to apply themselves to regulate His Majesties Revenue to his best advantage, and to settle it to the support of his Royal Dignity, in Honor and Plenty; and also to put the Town of Hull into such hands as His Majesty shall appoint, with consent of Parliament.

*B.* Is not that to put it into such hands as His Majesty shall appoint by the consent of the Petitioners, which is no more than to keep it in their hands, as it is? Did they want, or think the King wanted common sense, so as not to perceive that their promise herein was worth nothing?

*A.* After the sending of these propositions to the King and His Majesties refusal to grant them, they began on both sides to prepare for War, the King raising a Guard for his Person in *York-shire* and the Parliament thereupon having Voted *That the King intended to make War upon his Parliament*, gave Order for the Mustering and Exercising the People in Arms, and published Propositions to invite and encourage them to bring in either ready Money or Plate, or to promise under their hands to maintain certain numbers of Horse, Horsemen and Arms, for the defence of the King and Parliament, (meaning by King, as they had formerly declared, not his Person, but his Laws) promising to repay their Money with Interest of 8 *l.* in the Hundred, and the value of their Plate with 12 *d.* the Ounce for the Fashion. On the other side the King came to *Nottingham*, and there did set up his Standard Royal, and sent out Commissioners of Array to call those to him, which by the Antient Laws of *England* were bound to serve him in the Wars. Upon this occasion there passed divers Declarations between the King and Parliament, concerning the Legality of this Array, which are too long to tell you at this time.

*B. Not*

*B.* Nor do I desire to hear any Mooting about this Question, for I think that General Law of *Salus Populi*, and the Right of defending himself against those that had taken from him the Sovereign Power, are sufficient to make Legal whatsoever he should do, in order to the recovery of his Kingdom, or the punishing of the Rebels.

*A.* In the mean time the Parliament raised an Army, and made the Earl of *Essex* General thereof; by which Act they declared what they meant formerly, when they Petition'd the King for a Guard to be Commanded by the said Earl of *Essex*. And now the King sends out his Proclamations, forbidding Obedience to the Orders of the Parliament concerning the *Militia*; and the Parliament send out Orders against the Executions of the Commissions of Array; hitherto (though it were a War before) yet there was no Blood shed, they shot at one another nothing but Paper.

*B.* I understand now how the Parliament destroy'd the Peace of the Kingdom, and how easily, by the help of Seditious *Presbyterian* Ministers, and of ambitious ignorant Orators, they reduced the Government into Anarchy: but I believe it will be a harder task for them to bring in Peace again, and settle the Government either in themselves, or in any other Governor or form of Government; for granting that they obtain'd the Victory in this War, they must be beholding for it to the Valor, good Conduct, or Felicity of those

those to whom they give the Command of their Armies, especially to the General, whose good success will, without doubt, bring with it the love and admiration of the Soldiers; so that it will be in his power either to take the Government upon himself, or to place it where himself thinks good. In which Case, if he take it not to himself, he will be thought a Fool; and if he do, he shall be sure to have the Envy of his subordinate Commanders, who will look for a share either in the present Government, or in the Succession to it; for they will say, has he obtain'd this Power by his own without our Danger, Valor and Council? And must we be his Slaves, whom we have thus rais'd? Or is not there as much Justice on our side against him, as was on his side against the King?

*A.* They will and did, insomuch that the reason why *Cromwel*, after he had gotten into his own hands the absolute Power of *England*, *Scotland*, and *Ireland*, by the name of Protector, did never dare to take upon him the Title of King, nor was ever able to settle it upon his Children, his Officers would not suffer it; as pretending after his Death to succeed him; nor would the Army consent to it, because he had ever declar'd to them against the Government of a Single Person.

*A.* But to return to the King, What Means had he to pay? What Provision had he to Arm any Means to Levy an Army, able to resist the Army of the Parliament, maintained by the great

great Purse of the City of *London*, and Contributions of almost all the Towns Corporate in *England*; and furnished with Arms as fully as they could require?

*A.* 'Tis true, the King had great disadvantages, and yet by little and little he got a considerable Army, with which he so prospered, as to grow stronger every day, and the Parliament weaker, till they had gotten the *Scotch* with an Army of 21000 Men to come into *England* to their assistance; but to enter into the particular Narrative of what was done in the War, I have not now time.

*B.* Well then, we will talk of that at next meeting.

H s

B. We

**B. W**E left at the Preparations on both sides for War, which when I considered by my self, I was mightily puzzled to find out what possibility there was for the King to equal the Parliament in such a Course, and what hopes He had of Money, Men, Armes, Fortified Places, Shipping, Council, and Military Offices, sufficient for such an Enterprize against the Parliament, that had Men and Money as much at command, as the City of *London*, and other Corporation Towns were able to furnish, which was more than they needed. And for the Men they should set forth for Soldiers, they were almost all of them spitefully bent against the King, and his whole Party, whom they took either for Papists, or Flatterers of the King, or that had design'd to raise their Fortunes by the Plunder of the City, and other Corporation Towns; and though I believe not that they were more Valiant than other Men, nor that they had so much experience in the War, as to be accounted good Soldiers; yet they had that in them, which in time of Battel is more conducing to Victory than Valor, and experience both together, and that was Spight.

And for Armes, they had in their hands the Chief Magazines, the Tower of *London*, and  
*Kingston*



*Kingston* upon *Hull*, besides most of Powder and Shot that lay in several Towns, for the use of the Trained Bands.

Fortified Places there were not many then in *England*, and most of them in the Hands of the Parliament.

The King's Fleet was wholly in their Command under the Earl of *Warwick*; Councillors they needed no more, than such as were of their own Body, so that the King was every way Inferior to them, except it were perhaps in Officers.

A. I cannot compare their chief Officers for the Parliament, the Earl of *Essex* (after the Parliament had Voted the War) was made General of all their Forces, both in *England* and *Ireland*, from whom, all other Commanders were to receive their Commissions.

B. What moved them to make the Earl of *Essex* General? And for what cause was the Earl of *Essex* so displeased with the King, as to accept that Office?

A. I do not certainly know what to answer to either of those Questions, but the Earl of *Essex* had been in the Wars abroad, and wanted neither Experience, Judgment nor Courage to perform such an undertaking; and besides that, you have heard, (I believe) how great a Darling of the people his Father had been before him; and what honor he had got by the success of his Enterprize upon *Cales*, and in some other Military Actions.

To which I may add, That this Earl himself was not held by the People to be so great a Favorite at Court; as that they might not trust him with their Army against the King, and by this you may perhaps conjecture the cause for which the Parliament made choice of him for General.

*B.* But why did they think him discontented with the Court?

*A.* I know not that, nor indeed that he was so; he came to Court as other Noblemen did, when occasion was to wait upon the King, but had no Office till a little before this time, to oblige him to be there continually; but I believe verily, that the unfortunateness of his Marriage, had so discountenanced his Conversation with Ladies, that the Court could be his proper Element, unless he had had some extraordinary favor there, to ballance that calamity for particular discontent from the King, or intention of revenge for any supposed disgrace, I think he had none; nor that he was any ways addicted to *Presbyterian* Doctrine, or other Fanatick Tenets in Church or State saving only that he was carried away with the stream, (in a manner) of the whole Nation, to think that *England* was not an absolute, but a mixt Monarchy, not considering that the Supreme Power must always be absolute. whether it be in the King or in the Parliament.

*B.* Who was General of the King's Army?

*A.* None

*A.* None yet but Himself, nor indeed had He yet any Army but there, coming to him at that time two Nephews, the Princes, *Rupert* and *Maurice*; He put the Command of His Horse into the hands of Prince *Rupert*, a Man then whom no man living had a better courage, nor was more active and diligent in prosecuting his Commission; and though but a young man then, was not without experience in the conducting of Soldiers, as having been an Actor in part of his Fathers Wars in *Germany*.

*B.* But how would the King find money to pay such an Army as was necessary for Him, against the Parliament?

*A.* Neither the King nor Parliament had much money at that time in their own hands, but were fain to rely upon the Benevolence of those that took their patts, wherein (I confess) the Parliament had a mighty great advantage; those that helped the King in that kind, were only Lords and Gentlemen, which not approving the proceedings of the Parliament, were willing to undertake the payment every one of a certain number of Horse, which cannot be thought any very great assistance, the persons that payed them being so few; for other Monies that the King then had, I have not heard of any but what he borrow'd upon Jewels in the *Low-Countries*; whereas the Parliament had a very plentifully Contribution, not only from *London*, but generally from their Faction in all other places of *England*, upon certain Propositions,

ons, (published by the Lords and Commons in *June* 1642.) at which time they had newly Voted, That the King intended to make War upon them, for bringing in of Money or Plate, to maintain Horse and Horsemen, and to buy Arms for the preservation of the Publick Peace, and for the defence of the King, and both Houses of Parliament; for the Re-payment of which Money and Plate, they were to have the *Publick Faith*.

*B.* What *Publick Faith* is there, when there is no *Publick*? What is it that can be call'd *Publick*, in a Civil War, without the King?

*A.* The Truth is, the Security was nothing worth, but serv'd well enough to gull those seditious Blockheads that were more fond of change, than either of their peace or profit, having by this means gotten Contributions from those that were the well-affected to their Cause, they made use of it afterwards, to force the like Contribution from others; for in *November* following, they made an Ordinance for Assessing also of those that had not Contributed then, or had Contributed, but not proportionable to their Estates. And yet this was contrary to what the Parliament promised and declar'd in the Propositions themselves; for they declar'd in the first Propositions. *That no mans Affection should be measured by the proportion of his Office, so that he expressed his good will to the Service in any proportion whatsoever.*

Besides this, in the beginning of *March* following, they made an Ordinance to Levy weekly a great Sum of Money upon every County, City, Town, Place and Person of any Estate almost in *England*, which weekly Sum (as may appear by the Ordinance it self, Printed and Published in *March* 1642. by Order of both Houses) comes to almost 33000 *l.* and consequently to above 2700000 *l.* for the year. They had, besides all this, the Profits of the King's Lands and Woods, and whatsoever was remaining unpaid of any Subsidy formerly granted him, and the Tunnage and Poundage usually received by the King, besides the profit of the Sequestration of Great Persons, whom they pleas'd to Vote Delinquents, and the Profits of the Bishops Lands which they took to themselves a year or a little more after.

*B.* Seeing then the Parliament had such advantage of the King in Money, Arms, and Multitude of Men, and had in their Hands the King's Fleet, I cannot Imagine what hope the King could have either of Victory (unless He resign'd into their Hands the Sovereignty, or subsisting:) for I cannot well believe He had any advantage of them either in Concillors, Conducts, or in the Resolution of His Soldiers.

*A.* On the contrary, I think He had also some dis-advantage in that; for though he had as good Officers at least as any then Serv'd the Parliament, yet I doubt He had not so useful Council as was necessary. And for His Soldiers, though they

they were Men as stout as theirs, yet because their Valor was not sharpened so with Malice, as theirs was of the other side, they fought not so keenly as their Enemies did, amongst whom there was a great many *London* Apprentises, who, for want of experience in the War, would have been fearful enough of death and wounds approaching visibly in glittering Swords, but for want of judgment scarce thought of such a death as comes invisibly in a Bullet, and therefore were very hardly to be driven out of the Field.

B. But what fault do you find in the King's Councils, Lords, and other Persons of Quality and Experience?

A. Only that fault which was generally in the whole Nation, which was, That they thought the Government of *England* was not an absolute, but a mixt Monarchy; and that if the King should clearly subdue this Parliament, that His power would be what He pleased, and theirs as little as He pleased, which they counted Tyranny. This opinion, though it did not lessen their endeavors to gain the Victory for the King in a Battel, when the Battle could not be avoided, yet it weakned their endeavors to procure him an absolute Victory in the War. And for this cause, notwithstanding that they saw that the Parliament was firmly resolv'd to take all Kingly power whatsoever out of His Hands, yet their Council to the King was upon all occasions to offer Propositions to them of Treaty and Accommodation, and to make and publish Declarations which

which any Man might easily have foreseen would be fruitless; and not only so, but also of great disadvantage to those Actions by which the King was to recover His Crown, and preserve His Life; for it took off the courage of the best and forwardest of his Soldiers that lookt for great benefit out of the Estates of the Rebels in case they could subdue them, but none at all if the business should be ended by a Treaty.

*B.* And they had reason, for a Civil War never ends by Treaty, without the Sacrifice of those, who were on both sides the sharpest. You know well enough how things past the Reconciliation of *Augustus* and *Antonius* in *Rome*. But I thought that after they once began to Levy Soldiers one against another, that they would not any more have return'd of either side to Declarations, or other Paper War, which if it could have done any good, would have done it long before this.

*A.* But seeing the Parliament continued writing, and set forth their Declarations to the People against the Lawfulness of the King's Commission of Array, and sent Petitions to the King as fierce and Rebellious as ever they had done before, demanding of him, That he would Disband his Soldiers, and come up to the Parliament, and leave those whom the Parliament call'd Delinquents, (which were none but the King's best Subjects) to their Mercy, and pass such Bills as they should advise Him. Would you not have the King set forth Declarations and Proclamations, against the Illegality of their Ordinances?

Ordinances by which they Levied Soldiers against him, and answer those insolent Petitions of theirs.

*B.* No, it had done him no good before, and therefore was not likely to do him any afterwards; for the common People, whose hands were to decide the Controversie, understood not the Reasons of either Party; and for those that by Ambition were once set upon the Enterprize of changing the Government, they care not much what was Reason and Justice, in the Cause, but what Strength they might procure, by reducing the multitude with Remonstrances from the Parliament-House, or by Sermons in the Churches; and to their Petitions, I would not have had any answer at all more than this, That if they would disband their Army, and put themselves upon his Mercy, they should find Him more gracious than they expected.

*A.* That had been a gallant answer indeed, if it had proceeded from Him after some extraordinary great Victory in Battel, or some extraordinary assurance of a Victory at last in the whole War.

*B.* Why, what could have hapned to Him worse, than at length He suffered, notwithstanding in His gentle answer, and all his reasonable Declarations?

*A.* Nothing, but, who knew that?

*B.* Any Man might see, that He was never like to be restor'd to His Right without Victory, and such His Statutes being known to the People,



ple, would have brought to His assistance many more hands, than all the arguments of Law, or force of Eloquence, couched in Declarations, and other Writings, could have done by far; and I wonder what kind of Men they were, that hindered the King from taking this Resolution.

*A.* You may know by the Declarations themselves, which are very long, and full of Quotations of Records, and of Cases formerly Reported, that the Penners of them were either Lawyers by Profession, or such Gentlemen as had the ambition to be thought so. Besides, I told you before, that those which were then likeliest to have their counsel asked in this business, were averse to absolute Monarchy, as also to absolute Democracy, or Aristocracy; all which Governments they esteemed Tyranny, and were in love with Monarchy; which they us'd to praise by the name of mixt Monarchy, though it were indeed nothing else but pure Anarchy: and those Men whose Pens the King most us'd in these Controversies of Law, and Politick, were such, (if I have not been mis-informed) as having been Members of this Parliament, had declaimed against Ship-money, and other Extra-Parliamentary Taxes, as much as any: but when they saw the Parliament grow higher in their demands, than they thought they would have done, went over to the King's Party.

*B.* Who were those?

*A.* It is not necessary to name any man, seeing I have undertaken only a short Narration of the Follies

Follies and other Faults of Men during this trouble, but not (by naming of persons) to give you or any man else occasion to esteem them the less, now that the Faults on all sides have been forgiven.

*B.* When the Business was brought to this height, by levying of Soldiers, and seizing on the Navy, Arms, and other Provisions on both sides, that no Man was so blind, as not to see they were in an estate of War one against another, why did not the King (by Proclamation or Message) according to his undoubted Right, Dissolve the Parliament, and thereby diminish in some part the Authority of their Levies, and of other their unjust Ordinances?

*A.* You have forgotten that I told you that the King Himself, by a Bill that He passed at the same time when he passed the Bill for the Execution for the Earl of *Strafford*, had given them Authority to hold the Parliament, till they should by consent of both Houses dissolve themselves: If therefore He had by any Proclamation or Message to the Houses dissolv'd them, they would, to their former Defamations of His Majesties actions, have added this, That He was a Breaker of His Word, and not only in contempt of him, have continued their Session, but also have made advantage of it, to the increase and strengthening of their own Party.

*B.* Would not the King's raising of an Army against them, be interpreted as a purpose to dissolve them by force? And was it not as great a breach

breach of promise to scatter them by force, as to dissolve them by Proclamation? Besides, I cannot conceive that the passing of that Act was otherwise intended than conditionally, so long as they should not ordain any thing contrary to the Sovereign Right of the King, which condition they had already by many of their Ordinances broken; and, I think, that even by the Law of Equity, which is the unalterable Law of Nature, a man that hath the Sovereign Power cannot, if he would, give away the right of any thing which is necessary for him to retain, for the good Government of his Subjects, unless he do it in exprefs words, saying, That he will have the Sovereign Power no longer; for the giving away that which by consequence only draws the Sovereignty along with it, is not (I think) a giving away of the Sovereignty, but an error, such as work nothing but an invalidity in the Grant it self. And such was the King's passing this Bill, for the continuing of the Parliament, as long as the Two Houses pleas'd. But now that the war was resolv'd on, on both sides, what needed any more dispute in writings?

A. I know not what need they had, but on both sides they thought it needful to hinder one another as much as they could from levying of Soldiers, and therefore the King did set forth Declarations in Print; to make the people know that they ought not to obey the Officers of the new Militia set up by Ordinance of Parliament, and

## The History of the

and also to let them see the Legality of His own Commissions of Array; and the Parliament on their part did the like, to justifie to the People the said Ordinance, and to make the Commission of Array appear unlawfull.

*B.* When the Parliament were Levying of Soldiers, was it not lawfull for the King to Levy Soldiers, to defend Himself and His Right, though there had been no other Title for it, but His own preservation, and that the Name of Commission of Array had never been heard of?

*A.* For my part, I think there cannot be a better Title for War, than the defence of a Man's own Right, but the People at that time thought nothing lawful for the King to, for which there was not some Statute made by Parliament. For the Lawyers, I mean the Judges of the Courts of *Westminster*, and some few others, though but Advocates, yet of great Reputation for their skill in the Common Laws, and Statutes of *England*, had infected most of the Gentry of *England* with their Maxims and Cases prejudg'd, which they call *Presidents*, and made them think so well of their own knowledge in the Law, that they were of this occasion to shew it against the King, and thereby to gain a Reputation with the Parliament, of being good Patriots, and wise Statesmen.

*B.* What was this Commission of Array?

*A.* King *William* the Conqueror had gotten  
into

into his hands by Victory, all the Lands in *England*, of which he disposed some part, as Forests, and Chaces for his own Recreation, and some part to Lords and Gentlemen; that had assisted him, or were to assist him in the Wars; upon which he laid a charge of service in his Wars, some with more Men, and some with less, according to the Lands he had given them; whereby, when the King sent Men unto them with Commission to make use of their service, they were obliged to appear with Arms, and to accompany the King to the Wars for a certain time at their own Charges, and such were the Commissions by which this King did then make his Levies.

*B.* Why then was it not Legal?

*A.* No doubt but it was Legal, but what did that amount to with Men that were already resolv'd to acknowledge for Law, nothing that was against their design of abolishing Monarchy, and placing a Sovereign and absolute Arbitrary power in the House of Commons.

*A.* To destroy Monarchy, and set up the House of Commons are two Businesses.

*A.* They found it so at last, but did not think it so then.

*B.* Let us come now to the Military power.

*A.* I intended only the Story of their Injustice, Impudence and Hypocrisie; therefore  
for

## The History of the

for the proceeding of the War, I refer you to the History thereof, written at large in *English*.

I shall only make use of such a Thread as is necessary for the filling up of such Knavery and Folly also, as I shall observe in their several Actions.

From *York* the King went to *Hull*, where was His Magazine of Arms for the Northern Parts of *England*, to try if they would admit Him: the Parliament had made Sir *John Hotham* Governor of the Town, who caused the Gates to be shut, and presenting himself upon the Walls, flatly denied Him Entrance; for which the King caused him to be Proclaim'd Traytor, and sent a Messenger to the Parliament to know if they own'd the Actions.

*B.* Upon what Grounds?

*A.* Their pretence was this, That neither this, nor any other Town in *England* was otherwise the Kings, than in Trust for the People of *England*.

*B.* But what was that to the Parliament?

*A.* Yes, say they, for we are the Representative of the People of *England*.

*B.* I cannot see the force of this Argument: We Represent the People; *Ergo*, all that the People has is ours: The Mayor of *Hull* did Represent the King; Is therefore all the King had in *Hull* the Mayor's? The People of *England* may

may be represented with Limitations, as to deliver a Petition, or the like, does it follow, that they who deliver the Petition, have Right to all the Towns in *England*? When began this Parliament to be a representative of *England*? Was it not *November 3. 1640*? Who was it the day before that had the Right to keep the King out of *Hull*, and possess it for themselves? For there was then no Parliament, whose was *Hull* then?

*A.* I think it was the King's; not only because it was called the King's Town upon *Hull*, but because the King Himself did then and ever represent the Person of the People of *England*. If He did not, who then did, the Parliament having no Being?

*B.* They might perhaps say, the People had then no Representative.

*A.* Then there was no Commonwealth, and consequently all the Towns of *England* being the Peoples, you and I, and any Man else, might have put in for his share. You may see by this, what weak People they were, that were carried into the Rebellion, by such weak reasoning as this Parliament used; and how impudent they were, that did put such Fallacies upon them.

*B.* Surely they were such, as were esteem'd the wisest Men in *England*, being upon that account chosen to be the Parliament.

## The History of the

*A.* And were they also esteem'd the wisest Men of *England*, that chose them?

*B.* I cannot tell that; for I know it is usual with the Free-holders in the Counties, and the Tradesmen in the Cities and Burroughs to choose, as neer as they can, such as are most repugnant to the giving of subsidies.

*A.* The King in the beginning of *August*, after He had summon'd *Hull*, and tryed some of the Counties thereabout, what they would do for Him, set up His Standard at *Nottingham*, but there came not in thither Men enough to make any Army sufficient to give Battel to the Earl of *Essex*.

From thence He went to *Shrewsbury*, where He was quickly furnished; and appointing the Earl of *Linsey* to be General, He resolv'd to march towards *London*.

The Earl of *Essex* was at *Worcester* with the Parliament Army, making no offer to stop Him in His passage, but as soon as he was gone by, marched close after Him.

The King therefore, to avoid being inclosed between the Army of the Earl of *Essex*, and the City of *London*, turned upon him, and gave him Battel at *Edge-hill*; where, though he got not an intire Victory, yet he had the better, if either had the better; and had certainly the fruit of a Victory which was to march on, in his intended way towards *London*, in which the next morning He took *Banbury* Castle, and from thence went to *Oxford*.



*Oxford*, and thence to *Brentford*, where he gave a great Defeat to Three Regiments of the Parliaments Forces, and so return'd to *Oxford*.

B. Why did not the King go on from *Brentford*?

A. The Parliament, upon the first notice of the King's marching from *Shrewsbury*, caused all the Trained Bands, and the Auxiliaries of the City of *London* (which were so frightened, as to shut up all their shops) to be drawn forth; so that there was a complete and numerous Army ready for the Earl of *Essex*, that was crept into *London* just at that time to head it, and this was it that made the King retire to *Oxford*.

In the beginning of *February* after, Prince *Rupert* took *Cirencester* from the Parliament, with many Prisoners, and many Arms, for it was newly made a Magazine. And thus stood the business between the Kings and the Parliaments Forces.

The Parliament in the mean time, caused a Line of Communication to be made about *London*, and the Suburbs, of 12 miles in compass, and constituted a Committee for the Association, and the putting into a posture of defence the Counties of *Essex*, *Cambridge*, *Suffolk*, and some others; and one of those Commissioners was *Oliver Cromwel*, from which employment he came to his following greatness.

B. What was done during this time, in other Parts of the Country?

A. In the West, the Earl of *Stamford* had the employment of putting in execution the Ordinance of Parliament for the Militia; and Sir *Ralph Hopton*, for the King, executed the Commission of Array. Between those two was fought a Battle at *Liscard* in *Cornwal*; where Sir *Ralph Hopton* had the Victory, and presently took a Town called *Saltaſh*, with many Arms, and much Ordnance, and many Prisoners. Sir *William Waller* in the mean time seized *Wincheſter* and *Chicheſter* for the Parliament.

In the North, for the Commission of Array, my Lord of *Newcaſtle*; and for the Militia of the Parliament, was my Lord *Fairfax*, My Lord of *Newcaſtle* took from the Parliament *Tadcaſter*, in which were a great part of the Parliaments Forces for that County, and had made himſelf in a manner, Maſter of all the North, about this time, that is to ſay in *February*; the Queen landed at *Barlington*, and was conducted by my Lord of *Newcaſtle*, and the Marqueſs of *Montroſs*, to *York*; and not long after to the King.

Divers other little advantages, beſides theſe had the King's Party of the Parliaments in the North.

There hapned alſo between the Militia of the Parliament, the Commission of Array in *Staffordſhire*, under my Lord *Brook* for the Parliament, and my Lord of *Northampton* for the King  
great

great contention, wherein both these Commanders were slain; for my Lord *Brook* besieging *Lichfield Close*, was kill'd with a shot, notwithstanding which they gave not over the Siege, till they were Masters of the *Close*. But presently after my Lord of *Northampton* besieged it again for the King, which to relieve, Sir *William Brereston*, and Sir *John Gell* advanced towards *Lichfield*, and were met at *Hopion heath* by the Earl of *Northampton*, and routed; the Earl himself was slain, but his Forces with Victory return'd to the Siege again; and shortly after seconded by Prince *Rupert*, who was then abroad in that Country, carried the place.

These were the chief Actions of this year 1641. wherein the King's Party had not much the worse.

*B.* But the Parliament had now a better Army, insomuch that if the Earl of *Essex* had immediately followed the King to *Oxford* (not yet well fortified) he might, in all likelihood have taken it; for he could not want either Men or Ammunition, whereof the City of *London* (which was wholly at the Parliaments devotion) had store enough.

*A.* I cannot judge of that; but this is manifest, considering the estate the King was in at his first marching from *York*, when He had neither Money, nor Men, nor Arms enough, to put Him in hope of Victory, that this year (take it altogether) was very prosperous.

*B.* But what great Folly or Wickedness do you observe in the Parliaments Actions for this first year?

*A.* All that can be said against them in that point, will be excus'd with the pretext of War, and come under one Name of Rebellion, saying that when they summoned any Town, it was always in the Name of the King and Parliament.

The King being in the contrary Army, and many times beating them from the Siege, I do not see how the right of War can justify such Impudence as that. But they pretended that the King was always virtually in the Two Houses of Parliament making a distinction between His Person Natural and Politique, which made the Impudence the greater, besides the folly of it: For this was but an University Quibble, such as Boyes make use of, in maintaining ( in the Schools ) such Tenets as they cannot otherwise defend.

In the end of this year, they solicited also the Scots to enter *England*, with an Army to suppress the power of the Earl of *Newcastle* in the North, which was a plain Confession, that the Parliament Forces were at this time inferior to the Kings; and most Men thought, that if the Earl of *Newcastle* had then marched Southward, and joined his Forces with the Kings, that most of the Members of Parliament would have fled out of *England*.

In the beginning of 1643. the Parliament seeing the Earl of *Newcastle's* power in the North grown formidable, sent to the *Scots*, to hire them to an invasion of *England*; and (to Compliment them in the meantime) made a Covenant among themselves, such as the *Scots* before had made against Episcopacy, and demolished Crosses, and Church-windows, (such as had in them any Images of Saints) throughout all *England*.

Also in the middle of the year, they made a Solemn League with the Nation, which was called, *The Solemn League and Covenant*.

*B.* Are not the *Scots* as properly to be called Foreigners, as the *Irish*? seeing then they persecuted the Earl of *Strafford*, even to death, for advising the King to make use of *Irish* Forces against the Parliament; with what face could they call in a *Scotch* Army against the King?

*A.* The King's Party might easily here have discern'd their design, to make themselves absolute Masters of the Kingdom, and to dethrone the King.

Another great Impudence, or rather a Bestial Incivility it was of theirs, That they Voted the Queen a Traytor, for helping the King with some Ammunition, and *English* Forces, from *Holland*.

*B.* Was it possible that all this could be done, and Men not see that Papers and Declarations

must be useless? And that nothing could satisfy them, but the Deposing of the King, and setting up of themselves in His place.

*A.* Yes, very possible, for who was there of them, though knowing that the King had the Sovereign Power, that knew the Essential Rights of Sovereignty? They dreamt of a mixt Power of the King and the Two Houses, That it was a divided Power, in which there could be no Peace, was above their understanding; therefore they were always urging the King to Declarations, and Treaties, (for fear of subjecting themselves to the King in an absolute Obedience) which increased the hope and courage of the Rebels, but did the King little good; for the People either understand not, or will not trouble themselves with Controversies in writing, but rather by his compliance by Messages, go away with an Opinion, That the Parliament was likely to have the Victory in the War.

Besides, seeing that the Penners and Contrivers of those Papers, were formerly members of the Parliament, and of another mind, and now revolted from the Parliament, because they could not bear that sway in the House which they expected, Men were apt to think, they believed not what they wrote.

As for Military Actions (to begin at the Head-quarters) Prince *Rupert* took *Brinningram*, a Garrison of the Parliaments.

In

In *July*, after the King's Forces had a great Victory over the Parliaments near *Devizes* on *Roundway-down*, where they took 2000 Prisoners, four Brass Pieces of Ordnance, 28 Colours, and all their Baggage. And shortly after *Bristol* was surrendr'd to Prince *Rupert* for the King; and the King Himself marching into the West took from the Parliament many other considerable places.

But this good fortune was not a little allay'd by His besieging of *Glocester*, which, after it was reduc'd to the last gasp, was reliev'd by the Earl of *Essex*, whose Army was before greatly wast-ed, but now recruited with Train'd Bands, and Apprentices of *London*.

*B.* It seems not only by this, but also by many Examples in History, That there can hardly arise a long or dangerous Rebellion, that has not some such overgrown City, with an Army or two in its belly, to foment it.

*A.* Nay more, those great Capital Cities, when Rebellion is upon pretence of Grievances, must needs be of the Rebel Party, because the Grievances are but Taxes to which Citizens, that is Merchants, whose profession is their private gain, are naturally mortal Enemies, their only glory being to grow excessively rich, by the wisdom of buying and selling.

*B.* But they are said to be, of all Callings, the most beneficial to the Common-wealth, by setting the poorer sort of people on work.

B. That is to say, by making poor people sell their labor to them at their own prizes, so that poor people, for the most part, might get a better Living by working in *Bridewell*, than by spinning, weaving, and other such labor as they can do, saving that by working slightly, they may help themselves a little, to the disgrace of our Manufacture. And as most commonly they are the first Encouragers of Rebellion, presuming in their strength; so also are they, for the most part, the first to repent, deceiv'd by them that command their strength.

But to return to the War: Though the King withdrew from *Glocester*, yet it was not to fly from, but to fight with the Earl of *Essex*, which presently after He did at *Newbury* where the Batrel was Bloody, and the King had not the worst, unless *Cirencester* be put into the Scale, which the Earl of *Essex* had in his way a few days before surpriz'd.

But in the North and the West the King had much the better of the Parliament; for in the North, at the beginning of the year, *May 29.* the Earls of *Newcastle* and *Cumberland* defeated the Lord *Fairfax* (who commanded in those Parts for the Parliament) at *Bramham-moor*, which made the Parliament to hasten the assistance of the *Scots*.

In *June* following, the Earl of *Newcastle* routed Sir *Thomas Fairfax* (Son to the Lord *Fairfax*) upon *Adderton Heath*, and in pursuit of them



them to *Bradford*, took and killed 2000 men, and the next day took the Town, and 2000 Prisoners more, (Sir *Thomas* himself hardly escaping) with all their Arms and Ammunition; and besides, this made the Lord *Fairfax* quit *Hallifax*, and *Beverly*.

Lastly, Prince *Rupert* reliev'd *Newark*, besieged by Sir *John Meldrum*, for the Parliament, with 7000 men, whereof 1000 were slain, the rest upon Articles departed, leaving behind them their Arms, Bag and Baggage.

To ballance in part this success, the Earl of *Manchester*, whose Lieutenant General was *Oliver Cromwel*, got a Victory over the Royalists near *Horn-Castle*, of which he slew 400, took 800 Prisoners, and 1000 Arms, and presently after took and plundered the City of *Lincoln*.

In the West, May 16. Sir *Ralph Hopton* at *Stratton* in *Devonshire*, had a Victory over the *Parliamentarians*, wherein he took 1700 Prisoners, 13 Brass Pieces of Ordnance, and all their Ammunition, which was 70 Barrels of Powder, and their Magazine of their other Provisions in the Town.

Again, at *Lansdown*, between Sir *Ralph Hopton*, and the *Parliamentarians* under Sir *William Waller*, was fought a fierce Battel, wherein the Victory was not very clear on either side, saying that the *Parliamentarians* might seem to have the better, because presently after Sir *William*  
Waller

Waller follow'd Sir Ralph Hopton to *Devizes* in *Wiltshire*, though to his cost; for there he was overthrown, as I have already told you.

After this, the King in Person marched into the west, and took *Exeter*, *Dorchester*, *Barnstable*, and divers other places, and had He not at His Return besieged *Glocester*, and thereby giving the Parliament time for new Levies, 'twas thought by many He might have routed the House of Commons. But the end of this year was more favorable to the Parliament; from *January* the Scots entered *England*, and *March* the first crossed the *Tyne*; and whilst the Earl of *Newcastle* was marching to them, Sir *Thomas Fairfax* gathered together a considerable Party in *Yorkshire*, and the Earl of *Manchester* from *Lyn* advanced towards *York*; so that the Earl of *Newcastle* having two Armies of Rebels behind him, and another before him, was forced to retreat to *York*, which those three Armies joining presently besieged. And these are all the considerable Military Actions in the year 1643.

In the same year the Parliament caused to be made a new great Seal, the Lord Keeper had carried the former Seal to *Oxford*: Hereupon the King sent a Messenger to the Judges at *Westminster*, to forbid them to make use of it; this Messenger was taken, and condemned at a Council of War and Hang'd for a spie?

B. Is that the Law of War?

A. I

A. I know not: But, it seems, when a Soldier comes into the Enemies Quarters, without address, or notice given to the chief Commander, that it is presum'd he comes as a Spie.

The same year when certain Gentlemen at *London*, received a Commission of Array from the King to Levy men for His Service in that City, being discover'd they were Condemn'd, and some of them Executed. This Case is not unlike the former.

B. Was not the making of a new great Seal a sufficient proof that the War was raised, not to remove evil Councillors from the King, but to remove the King Himself from the Government? what hope then could there be had in Messages and Treaties?

A. The entrance of the *Scots* was a thing unexpected to the King, who was made to believe by continual Letters from his Commissioners in *Scotland*, and Duke *Hamilton*, that the *Scotch* never intended any invasion. The Duke being then at *Oxford*, the King (assur'd that the *Scotch* were now entered) sent him Prisoner to *Pendennis* Castle in *Cornwal*.

In the beginning of this year 1644. the Earl of *Newcastle* being (as I told you) besieged by the joint Forces of the *Scots*, the Earl of *Manchester*, and Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, the King sent Prince *Rupert* to relieve the Town, and as soon as he could, to give the Enemy Battel; Prince *Rupert* passing through *Lancashire*, and by  
the

the way having storm'd the seditious Town of *Bolton*; and taken in *Stockford* and *Leverpole*, came to *York*, *July 1.* and relieved it, the Enemy being risen thence, to a place called *Marston-moor*, about four miles off, and there was fought that unfortunate Battel, that lost the King, in a manner all the North; Prince *Rupert* return'd by the way he came, and the Earl of *Newcastle* to *York*, and thence with some of His Officers over the Sea to *Hamburg*.

The Honor of this Victory was attributed chiefly to *Oliver Cromwel* (the Earl of *Manchester's* Lieutenant General) the *Parliamentarians* return'd from the Field, to the Siege of *York*, which, not long after, upon honorable Articles was surrendred; not that they were favored, but because the Parliament employed not much time, nor many men in the Siege.

*B.* This was a great and sudden abatement of the King's Prosperity.

*A.* It was so, but amends was made Him for it within five or six weeks after; for *Sir William Waller* (after the loss of his Army at *Roundway-down*) had another raised for him by the City of *London*, who for the payment thereof, impos'd a weekly Tax of the value of one Meals meat upon every Citizen. This Army, with that of the Earl of *Essex*, intended to besiege *Oxford*, which the King understanding, sent the Queen into the West; and marched Himself towards

*Worcester*.

*Worcester.* This made them to divide again, and the Earl to go into the West, and *Waller* to pursue the King. By this means it so fell out, that both their Armies were defeated; for the King turn'd upon *Waller*, routed him at *Copredy-Bridge*, took his Train of Artillery, and many Officers, and then presently followed the Earl of *Essex* into *Cornwal*, where he had him at such advantage, that the Earl himself was fain to escape in a small Boat to *Plymouth*; his Horse broke through the King's Quarters by night, but the Infantry were all forced to lay down their Arms, and upon Conditions never more to bear Arms against the King, were permitted to depart.

In *October* following, was fought a second and sharp Battel at *Newbury*; for this Infantry making no conscience of the Conditions made with the King, being now come towards *London*, as far as *Basingstoke*, had Arms put again into their hands; to whom some of the Train'd Bands being added, the Earl of *Essex* had suddenly so great an Army, that he attempted the King again at *Newbury*, and certainly had the better of the day, but the night parting them, had not a complete Victory. And it was observ'd here, That no part of the Earls Army fought so keenly, as they who had laid down their Arms in *Cornwal*.

These were the most important Fights in the year 1644. and the King was yet (as both himself

self and others thought ) in as good a condition as the Parliament, which despair'd of Victory by the Commanders then us'd, therefore they voted a new modelling of the Army, suspecting the Earl of *Essex*, though I think wrongfully, to be too much a Royalist, for not having done so much as they look'd for in this second Battel at *Newbury*.

The Earls of *Essex* and *Manchester* perceiving what they went about, voluntarily laid down their Commissions; and the House of Commons made an Ordinance, *That no Member of either House, should enjoy any Office or Command Military or Civ-l.*

With which oblique Blow they shook off those that had hitherto serv'd them too well, and yet out of this Ordinance they excepted *Oliver Cromwel*, in whose Conduct and Valor they had very great confidence, ( which they would not have done, if they had known him as well then, as they did afterwards ) and made him Lieutenant General.

In the Commission to the Earl of *Essex*, there was a Clause for Preservation of His Majesties Person, which in this new Commission was left out, though the Parliament (as well as the General) were as yet *Presbyterians*.

B. It seems the *Presbyterians* also (in order to their Ends) would fain have had the King murdered.

A. For my part, I doubt it not. For a Rightful King living, an Usurping Power can never be sufficiently secur'd. In this same year the Parliament put to death Sir *John Hotham* and his Son, for tampering with the Earl of *Newcastle*, about the Rendition of *Hull*. And Sir *Alexander Carraw*, for endeavoring to deliver up *Plymouth*, where he was Governor for the Parliament. And the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, for nothing but to please the *Soots*. For the general Article of going about to subvert the Fundamental Laws of the Land, was no Accusation, but only foul words.

They then also voted down the *Book of Common-Prayer*, and ordered the Use of a *Directory*, which had been newly compos'd by an Assembly of *Presbyterian* Ministers.

They were also then with much ado prevail'd with for a Treaty with the King at *Oxbridge*, where they remitted nothing of their former demands.

The King had also at this time a Parliament at *Oxford*, consisting of such discontented Members as had left the Houses at *Westminster*, but few of them had changed their old Principles, and therefore that Parliament was not much worth. Nay rather, because they endeavor'd nothing but Messages and Treaties; that is to say, defeating of Soldiers hope of benefit by the War, they were thought by most Men to do the King more hurt than good.

The year 1645. was to the King very unfortunate,

fortunate, for by the loss of one great Battel, He lost all He had formerly gotten, and at length His life.

The new-model'd Army, after consultation whether they should lay Siege to *Oxford*, or march Westward to the relief of *Taunton* (then besieged by the Lord *Goring*, and defended by *Blake*, famous afterward for his Actions at Sea) resolv'd for *Taunton*, leaving *Cromwel* to attend the motions of the King, though not strong enough to hinder Him. The King upon this advantage drew his Forces and Artillery out of *Oxford*. This made the Parliament to call back their General *Fairfax*, and order him to besiege *Oxford*. The King in the mean time reliev'd *Chester*, which was besieged by Sir *Will. Brereton*, and coming back, took *Leicester* by force, a place of great importance, and well provided of Artillery and Provision. Upon this success it was generally thought, that the King's Party was the stronger. The King himself thought so, and the Parliament, in a manner, confest the same, by commanding *Fairfax* to rise from the Siege, and endeavor to give the King Battel; for the Successes of the King, and the treacherous divisions growing now among themselves, had driven them to relie upon the fortune of one day, in which at *Naseby* the King's Army was utterly overthrow'd, and no hope left Him to raise another; therefore after the Battel he went up and down, doing the Parliament here and there some shrewd turns, but never much increasing His number.

*Fairfax*



*Fairfax* in the mean time first recovered *Leicester*, and then marching into the West, subdued it all, except only a few places, forcing, with much ado, my Lord *Hopton*, (upon honorable conditions) to disband his Army, and with the Prince of *Wales*, to pass over to *Scilly*, whence not long after they went to *Paris*.

In *April 1646*. General *Fairfax* began to march back to *Oxford*, in the mean time *Rainsborough*, who besieged *Woodstock*, had it surrender'd. The King therefore, who was now also return'd to *Oxford*, from whence *Woodstock* is but six miles, not doubting but that He should there by *Fairfax* be besieg'd, and having no Army to relieve Him, resolv'd to get away disguised to the *Scotch* Army about *Newark*, and thither he came the 4th of *May*; and the *Scotch* Army being upon remove homewards, carried Him with them to *Newcastle*, whither he came *May 13*.

**B.** Why did the King trust himself with the *Scots*? They were the first that Rebell'd. They were *Presbyterians* i. e. cruel. Besides, they were indigent, and consequently might be suspected would sell him to his Enemies for Money; And lastly, they were too weak to defend Him, or keep Him in their Country.

**A.** What could He have done better? For He had in the Winter before sent to the Parliament, to get a pass for the Duke of *Richmond* and others, to bring them Propositions of Peace, it was denied; He sent again, it was denied again.

Then

Then He desir'd He might come to them in Person; this also was denied. He sent again and again to the same purpose; but instead of granting it they made an Ordinance, *That the Commanders of the Militia of London, in case the King should attempt to come within the Line of Communication, should raise what Force they thought fit to suppress Tumults, to apprehend such as came with Him; and to secure (i. e. to Imprison) His Person from danger.*

If the King had adventur'd to come, and had been Imprison'd, what would the Parliament have done with Him? They had Dethron'd Him by their Votes, and therefore could have no security while He liv'd, though in Prison; it may be they would not have put him to Death by a High Court of Justice publickly, but secretly, some other way.

*B.* He should have attempted to get beyond Sea.

*A.* That had been from *Oxford* very difficult. Besides, it was generally believ'd, that the *Scotch* Army had promis'd Him, that not only His Majesty, but also His Friends that should come with Him, should be in their Army safe, not only for their Persons, but also for their Honours and Consciences. 'Tis a pretty Trick, when the Army, and the particular Soldiers of that Army are different things, to make the Soldiers promise what the Army means not to perform.

*July 11.* the Parliament sent their Propositions to the King at *New-Castle*, which Propositions they

they pretended to be the only way to a settled and well-grounded Peace. They were brought by the Earl of *Pembroke*, the Earl of *Suffolk*, Sir *Walter Earl*, Sir *John Hyppesley*, Mr. *Goodwin*, and Mr. *Robinson*, whom the King asked, If they had power to Treat? And when they said No, why they might not as well have been sent by a Trumpeter? The Propositions were the same dethroning ones which they used to send, and therefore the King would not assent to them. Nor did the *Scots* swallow them at first, but made some Exceptions against them; only it seems, to make the Parliament perceive they meant not to put the King into their hands *gratis*; and so at last the bargain was made between them, and upon payment of 200000 *l.* the King was put into the Hands of the Commissioners, which the *English* Parliament sent down to receive Him.

B. What a vile Complexion hath this Action, compounded of feigned Religion, and very Covetousness, Cowardize, Perjury, and Treachery?

A. Now the War that seemed so just, by many unseemly things is ended, you will see almost nothing in these Rebels, but Baseness and Falseness, besides their Folly.

By this time the Parliament had taken in all the rest of the King's Garrisons, whereof the last was *Pendennis* Castle, whither Duke *Hamilton* had been sent Prisoner by the King.

B. What was done during this time in *Ireland* and *Scotland*?

A. In

## The History of the

*A.* In *Ireland* there had been a Peace made, by Order from His Majesty, for a time, which by divisions by the *Irish* was ill kept. The Popish Party (the Pope's Nuncio being then there) took this to be the time for delivering themselves from their subjection to the *English*; besides, the time of the Peace was now expir'd.

*B.* How were they subject to the *English*, more than the *English* to the *Irish*? They were subject to the King of *England*, but so also were the *English* to the King of *Ireland*.

*A.* The distinction is somewhat too subtle for common understanding. In *Scotland* the Marquess of *Montrose*, for the King with a very few Men had miraculously with Victories over-run all *Scotland*, where many of his Forces (out of too much security) were permitted to be absent for a while, of which the Enemy having intelligence, suddenly came upon them, and forced them to fly back into the High-lands to recruit; where he began to recover strength, when the King commanded him (being then in the hands of the *Scots* at *Newcastle*) to disband, and he departed from *Scotland* by Sea.

In the end of the same year 1646. the Parliament caused the King's great Seal to be broken. Also the King was brought to *Helmeby*, and there kept by the Parliaments Commissioners, and here was an end of the War as to *England* and *Scotland*, but not to *Ireland*. About this time also died the Earl of *Essex*, whom the Parliament had discarded.

*B. Now*

*B.* Now that there was Peace in *England*, and the King in Prison, in whom was the Sovereign Power?

*A.* The Right was certainly in the King, but the exercise was yet in no body, but contended for, as in a Game at Cards, without fighting all the years 1647. and 1648. between the Parliament and *Oliver Cromwel*, Lieutenant General to *Sir Thomas Fairfax*. You must know that when King *Henry VIII.* abolished the Pope's Authority here, and took upon him to be the Head of the Church, the Bishops as they could not resist him, so neither were they discontented with it. For whereas the Pope before allowed not the Bishops to claim Jurisdiction in their Diocesses, *Jure Divino*, that is, of Right immediately from God, but by the Gift and Authority of the Pope; now that the Pope was outed, they made no doubt but the Divine Right was in themselves.

After this the City of *Geneva*, and divers other places beyond Sea, having revolted from the *Papacy*, set up *Fresbyteries* for the Government of their several Churches; and divers *English* Scholars that went beyond Sea, during the Persecution of Queen *Mary*, were much taken with this Government; and at their return in the time of Queen *Elizabeth*, and ever since, have endeavor'd, to the great trouble of the Church and Nation, to set up that Government here, wherein they might domineer, and applaud their own Wit and Learning. And these took upon

them not only a Divine Right, but also a Divine Inspiration; and having been connived at, and countenanced sometimes in their frequent Preaching, they introduced many strange and many pernicious Doctrines, out-doing the Reformation. (as they pretended both of *Luther* and *Calvin*) receding from the former Divinity, or Church Philosophy, (for Religion is another thing) as much as *Luther* and *Calvin* had receded from the Pope, and distracted their Auditors into a great number of Sects, as *Brownists*, *Anabaptists*, *Independents*, *Fifth-Monarchy Men*, *Quakers*, and divers others, all commonly called by the Name of *Fanaticks*, insomuch as there was none so dangerous an Enemy to the *Presbyterians*, as this Brood of their own hatching.

These were *Cromwel's* best Cards, whereof he had a very great number in the Army, and some in the House, whereof he himself was thought one, though he were nothing certain, but applying himself always to the Faction that was strongest, was of a colour like it. There was in the Army a great number (if not the *major* part) that aimed only at Rapine, and sharing the Lands and Goods of their Enemies; and these also upon the opinion they had of *Cromwel's* Valor and Conduct, thought they could not any way better arrive at their Ends, than by adhering to him.

Lastly, in the Parliament it self, though not the *major* part, yet a considerable number were *Fanaticks*, enough to put in doubts, and cause delay

lay in the Resolutions of the House; and sometimes also by advantages of a thin House, to carry a Vote in favor of *Cromwel*, as they did upon the 26th of *July*; for whereas on the 4th of *May* precedent, the Parliament had Voted, *That the Militia of London should be in the Hands of a Committee of Citizens, whereof the Lord Mayor, for the time being, should be one.*

Shortly after the *Independents* chancing to be the major, made an Ordinance, whereby it was put into hands more favorable to the Army. The best Cards the Parliament had, were the City of *London*, and the Person of the King. The General, Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, was right *Presbyterian*, but in the hands of the Army, and the Army in the hands of *Cromwel*, but which Party should prevail, depended on playing of the Game. *Cromwel* protested still Obedience and Fidelity to the Parliament, but meaning nothing less, bethought him, and resolv'd on a way to excuse himself of all that he should do to the contrary upon the Army; therefore he and his Son-in-law, *Commissary General Ireton*, as good at contriving as himself, and at speaking and writing better, contrive how to mutiny the Army against the Parliament. To this end they spread a whisper through the Army, that the Parliament, now they had the King, intended to disband them, to cheat them of their Arrears, and to send them into *Ireland*, to be destroy'd by the *Irish*.

The Army being herewith inrag'd, were taught

by *Ireton* to erect a Council among themselves of two Soldiers out of every Troop, and every Company to consult for the good of the Army, and to assist at the Council of War, and to advise for the Peace and Safety of the Kingdom. These were called Adjutators; so that whatsoever *Cromwel* would have to be done, he needed nothing to make them to do it, but secretly to put it into the head of these Adjutators; the effect of the first Consultation, was to take the King from *Holmeby*, and to bring him to the Army.

The General hereupon, by Letters to the Parliament, excuses himself and *Cromwel*, and the Body of the Army, as ignorant of the Fact; and that the King came away willingly with those Soldiers that brought him, assuring them withal, *That the whole Army intended nothing but Peace, nor opposed Presbytery, nor affected Independency, nor did hold any licentious freedom in Religion.*

*B.* 'Tis strange that Sir *Thomas Fairfax* could be so abused by *Cromwel*, as to believe this which he himself here writes.

*A.* I cannot believe that Cornet *Joyce* could go out of the Army with 1000 Soldiers to fetch the King, and neither the General, nor the Lieutenant General, nor the body of the Army take notice of it; and that the King went willingly, appears to be false, by a Message sent on purpose from His Majesty to the Parliament,

*B.* Here



**B.** Here is Perfidy upon Perfidy; first the Perfidy of the Parliament against the King, and then the Perfidy of the Army against the Parliament.

**A.** This was the first Trick *Cromwel* play'd, whereby he thought himself to have gotten so great an advantage, that he said openly, *That he had the Parliament in his Pocket*, (as indeed he had) *and the City too*. For upon the news of it, they were both the one and the other in very great disorder; and the more, because there came with it a Rumor, that the Army was marching up to *London*.

The King in the mean time, till his Residence was settled at *Hampton Court*, was carried from place to place, not without some ostentation; but with much more Liberty, and with more respect shewn Him by far, than when He was in the hands of the Parliaments Commissioners; for His own Chaplains were allow'd Him, and His Children, and some Friends permitted to see Him: Besides, that He was much Complimented by *Cromwel*, who promised Him in a serious and seeming passionate manner, to restore Him to His Right against the Parliament.

**B.** How was he sure he could do that?

**A.** He was not sure, but he was resolv'd to march up to the City and Parliament, to set up the King again, and be the second Man; unless in the attempt he found better hopes than yet he had, to make himself the first Man, by dispossessing the King.

*B.* What assistance against the Parliament and the City, could *Cromwel* expect from the King?

*A.* By declaring directly for Him, he might have had all the King's Party, which were many more now since His misfortune, than ever they were before; for in the Parliament it self, there were many that had discover'd the hypocrisie and private aims of their Fellows. Many were converted to their Duty, by their own natural Reason; and their Compassion for the King's Sufferings, had begot generally an Indignation against the Parliament; so that if they had been by the protection of the present Army brought together, and embodied, *Cromwel* might have done what he pleas'd in the first place for the King, and in the second for himself; but it seems he meant first to try what he could do without the King, and if that prov'd enough to rid his hands of him.

*B.* What did the Parliament and City do, to oppose the Army?

*A.* First the Parliament sent to the General, to have the King re-deliver'd to their Commissioners.

Instead of an answer to this, the Army sent Articles to the Parliament, and with them a Charge against Eleven of their Members, all of them active *Presbyterians*; of which Articles these are some:

I. That

I. That the House may be purged of those, who by the Self-denying Ordinance, ought not to be there.

II. That such as abused, and endeavored the ruin of the Kingdom might be disabled, to do the like hereafter.

III. That a day might be appointed to determine this Parliament.

IV. That they would make an Account to the Kingdom of the vast Sums of Money they had received.

V. That the Eleven Members might presently be suspended sitting in the House.

These were the Articles that put them to their Trumps, and they answered none of them, but that of the Suspension of the Eleven Members, which they said they could not do by Law, till the particulars of the Charge were produced.

But this was soon answer'd, with their own Proceedings against the Archbishop of Canterbury, and the Earl of Strafford.

The Parliament being thus somewhat aw'd, and the King made somewhat confident, he undertakes the City, requiring the Parliament to put the Militia into other hands.

**B.** What other hands? I do not well understand you.

**A.** I told you that the Militia of *London* was on the 4th of *May*, put into the hands of the Lord Mayor, and other Citizens, and soon after put into the hands of other Men more favorable unto the Army. And now I am to tell you, that on *July 26.* the violence of certain Apprentices, and disbanded Soldiers, forced the Parliament to resettle it as it was in the Citizens; and hereupon the two Speakers, and divers of the Members, ran away to the Army where they were invited, and contented to sit and vote in the Council of War, in the nature of a Parliament; and out of these Citizens hands they would have the Militia taken away, and put again into those hands out of which it was taken the 26th of *July*.

**B.** What said the City to this?

**A.** The *Londoners* mann'd their works, viz. the Line of Communication, rais'd an Army of valiant Men within the Line, chose good Officers, all being desirous to go out and fight, whensoever the City should give them Order; and in that posture stood, expecting the Enemy. The Soldiers in the mean time enter into an Engagement to live and dye with Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, the Parliament, and the Army.

**B.** That's very fine; they imitate that which the Parliament did when they first took up Arms against the King, stiling themselves, *The King and Parliament*; maintaining, *That the King was always*

*ways virtually in His Parliament:* So the Army now making War against the Parliament, called themselves, the Parliament and the Army; but they might with more reason say, That the Parliament (since it was in *Cromwel's* Pocket) was virtually in the Army.

*A.* Withal they send out a Declaration of the grounds of their March towards *London*, wherein they take upon them to be Judges of the Parliament, and of who are fit to be trusted with the business of the Kingdom, giving them the name, not of the Parliament, but of the Gentlemen at *Westminster*; for since the violence they were under *July 26.* the Army denied them to be a lawful Parliament.

At the same time they sent a Letter to the Mayor and Aldermen of *London*, reproaching them with those late Tumults, telling them, *They were Enemies to the Peace, Treacherous to the Parliament, Unable to defend either the Parliament or themselves, and demanded to have the City delivered into their hands, to which purpose (they said) they were now coming to them.*

The General also sent out his warrants to the Counties adjacent, summoning their Train'd Soldiers to join with them,

*B.* Were the Train'd Soldiers part of the Generals Army?

*A.* No, nor at all in Pay nor could be, without an order of Parliament. But what might not an Army do, that had master'd all the law of the Land?

The Army being come to *Hounsloe-heath*, distant from *London* but 10 Miles, the Court of Aldermen was called, to consider what to do; the Captains and Soldiers of the City were willing, and well-provided to go forth, and give them Battle; but a Treacherous Officer, that had charge of a work on *Southwark* side, had let in within the Line a small Party of the Enemies, who marched as far as to the Gate of *London-Bridge*, and then the Court of Aldermen (their hearts failing them) submitted on these Conditions:

*To relinquish their Militia.*

*To desert the Eleven Members.*

*To deliver up the Forts and Line of Communication, together with the Tower of London, and all Magazines and Arms therein to the Army.*

*To disband their Forces, and turn out all the Reformadoes, i. e. all Essex's old Soldiers.*

*To draw off their Guards from the Parliament.*

All which was done, and the Army marched triumphantly through the principal Streets of the City.

*B.* 'Tis strange that the Mayor and Aldermen having such an Army, should so quickly yield. Might they not have resisted the Party of the Enemies at the Bridge, with a Party of their own, and the rest of the Enemies, with the rest of their own?

A. I cannot judge of that: but to me it would have been strange if they had done otherwise; for I consider the most part of rich Subjects that have made themselves so by Craft and Trade, as men that never look upon any thing but their present profit, and who to every thing not lying in that way are in a manner blind, being amaz'd at the very thought of Plundering: if they had understood what vertue there is to preserve their Wealth in obedience to their lawful Sovereign, they would never have sided with the Parliament; and so we had no need of arming: The Mayor and Aldermen therefore assur'd by this submission to save their Goods, and not sure of the same by resisting, seem to me to have taken the wisest course: Nor was the Parliament less tame than the City, for presently *August 6.* the General brought the Fugitive Speaker and members to the House with a strong Guard of Soldiers and re-placed the Speakers in their Chairs; and for this they gave the General thanks, not only there in the House, but appointed also a day for a holy Thanksgiving; and not long after made him *Generalissimo* of all the Forces of *England*, and Constable of the *Tower*: but in effect all this was the advancement of *Cromwel*, for he was the usufructuary, though the property were in *Sir Tho. Fairfax*; for the *Independents* immediately cast down the whole Line of Communication, divide the Militia of *London, Westminster, and Southwark*, which were before united, displaced such Gover-

nors of Towns and Forts as were not for their turn, though placed there by Ordinance of Parliament, instead of whom they put in men of their own Party: They also made the Parliament to declare null all that had passed in the Houses, from *July* the 26th, to *Aug.* the 6th, and clapt in Prison some of the Lords, and some of the most Eminent Citizens, whereof the Lord Mayor was one.

*B. Cromwel* had power enough now to restore the King; why did he not?

*A.* His main end was to set himself in his place; the restoring of the King was but a reserve against the Parliament, which being in his Pocket, he had no more need of the King, who was now an impediment to him: To keep him in the Army was a trouble, to let him fall into the hands of the *Presbyterians* had been a stop to his hopes, to murder him privately (besides the horror of the act) now whilst he has no more than Lieutenant General, would have made him odious, without fathering his design; there was nothing better for his purpose, than to let him escape from *Hampton-Court* (where he was too near the Parliament) whither he pleased beyond Sea: For though *Cromwel* had a great Party in the Parliament-Houses, whilst they saw not his Ambition to be their Master, yet they would have been his Enemies as soon as that had appear'd. To make the King attempt an escape, some of those that had him in Custody, by *Cromwel's* direction told him, that the Adjutors meant



meant to murder him; and withal, caused a rumor of the same to be generally spread, to the end it might that way also come to the Kings Ear, as it did.

The King therefore in a dark and rainy night (his Guards being retir'd, as it was thought on purpose) left *Hampson-Court*, and went to the Sea-side, about *Southampton*, where a Vessel had been bespoken to transport him, but fail'd; so that the King was forced to trust himself with Colonel *Hammond*, then Governor of the Isle of *Wight*, expecting perhaps some kindness from him for Doctor *Hammonds* sake, Brother to the Colonel, and his Majesties much favor'd Chaplain; but it proved otherwise, for the Colonel sent to his Masters of the Parliament, to receive their Orders concerning him. This going into the Isle of *Wight* was not likely to be any part of *Cromwells* design, who neither knew whither, nor which way he would go, nor had *Hammond* known any more than other men, if the Ship had come to the appointed place in due time.

*B.* If the King had escaped into *France*, might not the *French* have assisted him with Forces to recover his Kingdom, and so frustrated the designs, both of *Cromwel*, and all other the King Enemies?

*A.* Yes much, just as they assisted his Son, our present most gracious Sovereign, who two years before fled thither out of *Cornwal*.

*B.* 'Tis methinks no great policy in Neighboring

boring Princes, to favor, so often as they do, one anothers Rebels, especially when they rebel against Monarchy it self; they should rather first make a League against Rebellion, and afterwards (if there be no remedy) fight one against another: Nor will that serve the turn among Christian Sovereigns, till Preaching be better lookt to, whereby the interpretation of a Verse in the *Hebrew*, *Greek*, or *Latine* Bible, is oftentimes the cause of Civil War, and the deposing and assassinating of Gods Anointed, and yet converse with those Divinity Disputers as long as you will, you will hardly find one in a hundred discreet enough to be imployed in any great Affairs, either of War or Peace: It is not the Right of the Sovereign, though granted to him by every mans consent expressly, that can inable a Subject to do his Office, it is the obedience of the Subject; and then by and by to cry out (as some Ministers did in the Pulpit) *To your Tent O Israel*. Common people know nothing of right or wrong by their own Meditation; they must therefore be taught the grounds of their Duty, and the reasons why Calamities ever follow Disobedience to their lawful Sovereigns. But to the contrary, our Rebels were publicly taught Rebellion in the Pulpits, and that there was no sin, but the doing of what the Preachers forbade, or the omitting of what they advised. But now the King was the Parliaments Prisoner: why did not the *Presbyterians* advance their own interest, by restoring him?

*A.* The Parliament, in which there were more *Presbyterians* yet than *Independents*, might have gotten what they would of the King, during his life, if they had not by an unconscionable and sottish Ambition obstructed the way to their Ends: They sent him Four Propositions to be signed, and past by him as Acts of Parliament, telling him, when these were granted, they would send Commissioners to treat with him of any other Articles.

First, The Propositions are these:

That the Parliament should have the Militia, and power of levying Money to maintain it for Twenty years; and after that term, the exercise thereof to return to the King, in case the Parliament think the safety of the Kingdom concern'd in it.

*B.* This first Article takes from the King the Militia, and consequently the whole Sovereignty for ever.

*A.* The Second was, That the King should justify the proceedings of the Parliament against himself, and declare void all Oaths and Declarations made by him against the Parliament.

*B.* This was to make him guilty of the War, and of all the Blood spilt therein.

*A.* The Third was, To take away all Titles of Honor conferred by the King, since the Great Seal was carried to him in *May 1642*.

The Fourth was, That the Parliament should Adjourn themselves, when, and to what place, and for what time they pleas'd.

These

These Propositions the King refus'd to grant, as he had reason, but sent others of his own, not much less advantagious to the Parliament, and desir'd a personal Treaty with the Parliament, for the settling of the Peace of the Kingdom; but the Parliament denying them to be sufficient for that purpose, voted, that there should be no more Addresses made to him, nor Messages receiv'd from him, but they would settle the Kingdom without him: And this they voted, partly upon the Speeches and Menaces of the Army Faction then present in the House of Commons, whereof one advis'd these three Points.

1. To secure the King in some In-land Castle with Guards.
2. To draw up Articles of Impeachment against him.
3. To lay him by, and settle the Kingdom without him.

Another said, that his denying the four Bills, was the denying Protection to his Subjects; and that therefore they might deny him Subjection; and added, that till the Parliament forsok the Army, the Army would never forsake the Parliament: This was Threatning. Last of all, *Cromwel* himself told them, it was now expected that the Parliament should govern and defend the Kingdom, and not any longer let the people expect their safety from a man whose heart God had hardned; nor let those that had so well defended the Parliament, be left after-

ward

ward to the rage of an irreconcilable Enemy, lest they seek their safety some other way. This again was threatening; as also laying his hand upon his Sword when he spake it.

And hereupon the Vote of Non-Addresses was made an Ordinance, which the House would afterwards have recalled, but were forc'd by *Cromwel* to keep their word.

The *Scotch* were displeas'd with it, partly because their Brethren the *Presbyterians* had lost a great deal of their Power in *England*, and partly also, because they had sold the King into their hands. The King now published a passionate Complaint to his People of this hard dealing with him, which made them pity him, but not yet rise in his behalf.

*B.* Was not this, think you, the true time for *Cromwel* to take possession?

*A.* By no means, there were yet many Obstacles to be removed; he was not General of the Army; the Army was still for a Parliament? the City of *London* discontented about their Militia; the *Scots* expected with an Army to rescue the King; his Adjutators were Levellers and against Monarchy, who though they had helped him to bring under the Parliament, yet like Dogs that are easily taught to fetch, and not easily taught to render, would not make him King; so that *Cromwel* had these businesses following to overcome.

1. To be *Generalissimo*.
2. To remove the King.

3. To

3. To suppress all Insurrections:

4. To oppose the *Scots*; And

Lastly, To Dissolve the present Parliament:

Mighty businesses, which he could never promise himself to overcome; therefore I cannot believe he then thought to be King, but only by serving the strongest Party (which was always his main policy) to proceed as far as Fortune, and that would carry him.

*B.* The Parliament were certainly no less Foolish than wicked, in deserting thus the King, before they had the Army at a better Command than they had.

*A.* In the beginning of 1648. the Parliament gave Commission to *Philip* Earl of *Pembroke* (then made Chancellor of *Oxford*, together with some of the Doctors there, as good Divines as he), to purge the University; by vertue whereof they turn'd out all such as were not of their Faction, and all such as had approved the use of the Common-Prayer-Book; as also divers scandalous Ministers and Scholars (that is, such as customarily and without need took the Name of God by in their Mouths, or used to speak wantonly, or use the company of Lewd Women) and for this last I cannot but commend them.

*B.* So shall not I; for it is just such another piece of Piety, as to turn Men out of an Hospital because they are Lame: Where can a man probably learn Godliness, and how to correct his Vices better, than in the Universities erected for that purpose.

*A.* It

*A.* It may be the Parliament thought otherwise; for I have often heard the Complaint of Parents, that their Children were debauched there to Drunkenness, Wantonness, Gaming, and other Vices, consequent to these: Nor is it a wonder among so many Youths, if they did not corrupt one another in despite of their Tutors, who oftentimes were little Elder than themselves: And therefore (I think) the Parliament did not much reverence the Institution of Universities, as to the bringing up of Young Men to Vertue, though many of them Learn'd there to Preach, and became thereby capable of Preferment and Maintenance; and some others were sent thither by their Parents, to save themselves the trouble of Governing them at home, during that time wherein Children are least Governable. Nor do I think the Parliament cared more for the Clergy than other men did: But certainly an University is an excellent Servant to the Clergy, and the Clergy if it be not carefully look'd to, (by their Dissentious Doctrines, and by the advantage to publish their Dissentions) is no extraordinary means to divide a Kingdom into this faction.

*B.* But seeing there is no place in this part of the World, where Philosophy and other Humane Sciences are not highly valued, where can they be learned better, than in Universities?

*A.* What other Sciences? Do not Divines comprehend all Civil and Moral Philosophy within their Divinity? and as for natural Philosophy

loſophy, is it not remov'd from *Oxford* and *Cambridge*, to *Gresham-Colledge* in *London*, and to be learn'd out of their *Gazets*? But we are gone from our Subject.

*B.* No, we are indeed gone from the great business of the Kingdom, to which, if you please let us return.

*A.* The first Insurrection, or rather Tumult was of the Apprentices on the ninth of *April*; but this was not upon the Kings account, but arose from a customary assembly of them for recreation in *Moor-fields*, whence some Zealous Officers of the Train'd Bands would needs drive them away by force, but were themselves routed with stones, and had their Ensign taken away by the Apprentices, which they carried about in the Streets, and frighted the Lord Mayor into his House where they took a Gun, called a *Drake*, and then they set Guards at some of the Gates, and all the rest of the day Childishly swagger'd up and down: but the next day the General put himself marching into the City, quickly dispersed them. This was but a small business, but enough to let them see that the Parliament was belov'd of the people. Next, the *Welsh* took Arms against them; there were three Colonels in *Wales*, *Langhorn Poyor*, and *Powel*, who had formerly done the Parliament good services, but now were commanded to disband, which they refus'd to do; and the better to strengthen themselves, declar'd for the King, and were about eight thousand.



and About the same time in *Wales* also was another Insurrection, Headed by Sir *Nicholas Key-mish*, and another under Sir *John Owen*; so that now all *Wales* was in Rebellion against the Parliament: And yet these were overcome in a Months time by *Cromwel*, and his Officers, but not without store of Blood shed on both sides.

B. I do not much pity the loss of those men, that impute to the King that which they do upon their own Quarrel.

A. Presently after this, some of the people of *Surrey* sent a Petition to the Parliament for a Personal Treaty between the King and Parliament, but their Messengers were beaten home again by the Soldiers that Quartered about *Westminster*; and then the *Kentish* Men having a like Petition to deliver, and seeing how it was like to be receiv'd, threw it away, and took up Arms; they had many gallant Officers, and for General, the Earl of *Norwich*, and increas'd daily by Apprentices, and Old Disbanded Soldiers, insomuch as the Parliament was glad to restore to the City their Militia, and to keep Guards upon the *Thames* side; and then *Fairfax* Marched towards the Enemy.

B. And then the *Londoners*, I think, might easily and suddenly have Master'd, first the Parliament, and next *Fairfax* his Eight thousand, and the lastly *Cromwel's* Army, or at least have given the *Scotch* Army opportunity to March unfought to *London*.

A. 'Tis true, but the City was never good at ven-

venturing ; nor were they, or the *Scots*, principled to have a King over them, but under them *Fairfax* Marching with Eight thousand against the Royalists, routed a part of them at *Maidstone* ; another part were taking in of places in *Kent* farther off, and the Earl of *Norwich*, with the rest, came to *Black-Heath*, and thence sent to the City to get passage through it, to join with those which were risen in *Essex*, under Sir *Charles Lucas*, and Sir *George Lisle* ; which being denied, the greatest part of his *Kentish* Men deserted him ; with the rest, not above Five hundred, he crossed the *Thames* unto the *Isle of Dogs* and so to *Bow*, and thence to *Colchester*. *Fairfax* having notice of this, crossed the *Thames* at *Graves-End*, and overtaking them, besieged them in *Colchester* : The Town had no Defence but a Bulwark, and yet held out, upon hope of the *Scotch* Army to relieve them, the space of Two Months.

Upon the News of the Defeat of the *Scots* they were forced to yield ; the Earl of *Norwich* was sent Prisoner to *London*, Sir *Charles Lucas* and Sir *George Lisle*, Two Loyal and Gallant Persons, were Shot to Death. There was also another little Insurrection Headed by the Earl of *Holland* about *Kingston*, but quickly suppressed, and he himself taken Prisoner.

B. How came the *Scots* to be so soon dispatched?

A. Meerly, as it is said, for want of Conduct : The Army was led by Duke *Hamilton* who

was then set at liberty, when *Pendennis* Castle, where he was Prisoner, was taken by the Parliament: He entred *England* with Horse and Foot 10000, to which came above 3000 English Royalists. Against these *Cromwel* marched out of *Wales* with Horse and Foot 11000, and near to *Preston* in *Lancashire*, in less then two hours, defeated them; and the cause of it is said to be that the *Scotch* Army was so ordered, as they could not all come to the Fight, nor relieve their fellows: After the Defeat they had no way to fly but farther into *England*, so that in the Pursuit they were almost all taken, and lost all that an Army could lose for the few that got home, did not all bring home their Swords, D. *Hamilton* was taken, and not long after sent to *London* but *Cromwel* marched to *Edenburrugh*, and there, by the help of the Faction which was contrary to *Hamilton's* he made sure not to be hindered in his designs, the first whereof was to take away the King's Life by the hand of the Parliament; whilst these things passed in the North, the Parliament (*Cromwel* being away) came to itself, and recalling their Vote of *Non-Addresses*, sent to the King new propositions, somewhat; but not so much easier than the former, and upon the King's answer to them, they sent Commissioners to treat with him at *Newport* in the Isle of *Wight*; where they so long dodged with him about Trifles, that *Cromwel* was come to *London* before they had done, to the Kings destruction, for the Army was now wholly at the Devotion of

of *Cromwel*, who set the Adjutators on work to make a Remonstrance to the House of Commons; wherein they require. 1. That the King *Charles* be brought to Justice. 2. That the Prince, and the Duke of *York*, be Summon'd to appear at a day, appointed, and proceeded with, according as they should give satisfaction. 3. That the Parliament settle the future Government, and set a reasonable period to their own Sitting, and make certain future Parliaments Annual, or Biennial. 4. That a competent number of the Kings Chief Instruments be Executed; and this to be done both by the House of Commons, and by a General agreement of the people, Testified by their Subscriptions: Nor did they stand for an Answer, but presently set a Guard of Soldiers at the Parliament-House Door, and other Soldiers in *Westminster-Hall*, suffering none to go into the House, but such as would serve their turns; all others were frighted away, or made Prisoners, and some upon divers Quarrellers suspended. About Ninety of them, because they had refus'd to Vote against the *Scots*; and other because they had Voted against the Vote of Non-Interpretation; and the rest were a House for *Cromwel*. The Phanaticks also in the City being countenanced by the Army, pack a new Common-Council, whereof any Forty was to be above the Mayor, and their first work was to frame a Petition for Justice against the King; which *Town* *W* *bourne* the Mayor (involving the City in the Regicide) deliver'd to the Parliament.

2. At the same time, with like violence they took the King from *Newport*, in the Isle of *Wight*, to *Hurst Castle*, till things were ready for his Tryal; and the Parliament in the mean time, to avoid Perjury, by an Ordinance declar'd void the Oaths of Supremacy and Allegiance; and presently after made another to bring the King to his Tryal.

B. This is a piece of Law that I understood not before, that when many men Swear singly, they may when they are Assembled (if they please) absolve themselves.

A. The Ordinance being drawn up, was brought into the House, where after Three several Readings, it was Voted, *That the Lords and Commons of England Assembled in Parliament, do declare, that by the Fundamental Laws of the Realm, it is a Treason in the King of England to Levy War against the Parliament: And this Vote was sent up to the Lords, and they denying their consent, the Commons in anger made another Vote, That all Members of Committees should proceed and Act in any Ordinance, whether the Lords concurr'd or no; and that the people under God, are the Original of all just Power; and that the House of Commons have the Supreme power of the Nation; and that whatsoever the House of Commons Enacted, is Law.* All this was pass'd *nemine contradicente*.

B. These Propositions Fight not only against a King of England, but against all the Kings of the World. It were good they thought on't; but I believe, that under God, the Original of all Laws was in the People.

2. A. But

*A.* But the People, for them and their Heirs, by consent and Oaths, have long ago put the Supreme Power of the Nation into the hands of their Kings, for them and their Heirs; and consequently into the hands of this King, their known and lawful Heir.

*B.* But does not the Parliament represent the People.

*A.* Yes, to some purposes; as to put up Petitions to the King when they have leave, and are griev'd but not to make a grievance of the Kings Power: Besides, the Parliament never represents the People, but when the King calls them: Is it to be imagin'd that he calls a Parliament to depose himself? Put the case every County and Burrough should have given for Benevolence a sum of Money, and that every County meeting in their County Court, or elsewhere, and that every Burrough in their Town Hall, should have chosen certain men to carry their several sums respectively to the Parliament had not these men represented the whole Nation?

*B.* Yes no doubt.

*A.* Do you think the Parliament would have thought it reasonable to be called to account by this Representative?

*B.* No sure; and yet, I must confess, the Cause is the same.

*A.* This Ordinance contained; First, a Summation of the Charge against the King; in substance this. *That not content with the incroachments*

of his Predecessors upon the freedom of the people, he had design'd to set up a Tyrannical power, and to what end had rais'd and maintain'd in the Land, a Civil War against the Parliament, whereby the Country hath been miserably wasted, the publick Treasure exhausted, thousands of people murder'd, and infinite other mischiefs committed.

Secondly, A Constitution passed of a High Court of Justice; that is, of a certain number of Commissioners, of whom any twenty had power to try the King, and proceed to Sentence, according to the Merit of the Cause, and see it speedily executed. The Commissioners met on Saturday, *January 20.* in *Westminster-Hall*, and the King was brought before them, sitting in a Chair: He heard the Charge read, but denied to plead to it, either Guilty or Not Guilty, till he should know by what lawful Authority he was brought thither. The President told him, that the Parliament affirm'd their own Authority; and the King persevered in his refusal to plead; though many words passed between him and the President, yet this is the sum of all: On Munday, *January 22.* the Court met again, and the Solicitor moved, that if the King persisted in denying the Authority of the Court, the Charge might be taken *pro confesso*; but the King still denied their Authority.

They met again, *January 23.* and then the Solicitor moved the Court for Judgment; whereupon the King was requir'd to give his Final Answer which was again a denial of their Authority.

Lastly, they met again, *January 27.* where the King then desir'd to be heard before the Lords and Commons in the *Painted Chamber*, and promising after that to abide the Judgment of the Court: the Commissioners retired for half an hour to consider of it; and then returning caused the King again to be brought to the Bar and told him, that what he proposed, was but another denial of the Courts Jurisdiction; and that if he had no more to say, they would proceed to Judgment: Then the King answering that he had no more to say, the President began a long Speech, in Justification of the Parliaments proceedings, producing the Examples of many Kings kill'd or depos'd by wicked Parliaments, Ancient and Modern, in *England, Scotland*, and other parts of the world: All which he endeavor'd to justify from this only Principle, That the People have the Supreme power, and the Parliament is the People. This Speech ended, the Sentence of Death was read, and the same upon Tuesday after, *Jan. the 30.* executed at the Gate of his own Palace of *White-hall*. He that can delight in reading how villanously he was used by the Soldiers, between the Sentence and Execution, may go to the Chronicle itself, in which he shall see what courage, patience, wisdom, and goodness was in this Prince, whom in their Charge the Members of the wicked Parliament stil'd Traytor, Tyrant, and Murderer.

The King being dead, the same day the



here made an Act of Parliament, *That whereas several pretences might be made to the Crown, &c. it is hereby Enacted by this present Parliament, and Authority of the same, that no Person shall presume to declare, or proclaim, or publish, or any way promote Charles Stuart, Son of Charles late King of England, commonly called Prince of Wales, or any other person, to be King of England and Ireland, &c.*

and B. Seeing the King was dead, and his Successors I pro barr'd, by what declared Authority was the Peace ering maintained?

egat A. They had in their anger against the Lords arlia formerly declared the Supreme Power of the les Nation to be in the House of Commons; and arlia now, on *February* the fifth, they Vote the Scot House of Lords to be useless, and dangerous. And thus the Kingdom was turned into a *Democracy*, or rather an *Oligarchy*; for presently they made an Act, That none of those Members who were secluded for opposing the Vote of Non-addresses, should ever be re-admitted: And these were commonly called the Secluded Members; and the rest were by some stiled a Parliament, and by others a Rump.

e Se I think you need not now have a Catalogue ronic either of the Vices, or of the Crimes, or of the e, p follies of the greatest part of them that composed the Long Parliament, than which greater of th cannot be in the World: What greater Vices it, a than Irreligion, Hypocrisie, Avarice, and Cruelty, which have appeared so eminently in the y th tions of *Presbyterian* Members, and *Presbyterians*

Ministers? What greater Crimes than Blasphemy, and killing Gods Anointed, which was done by the hands of the *Independants*, but by the folly and first Treason of the *Presbyterians*, who betrayed and sold him to his Murderers? Nor was it a little folly in the Lords, not to see that by the taking away of the Kings Power, they lost withal their own Priviledges; or to think themselves either for number or judgment any way a considerable assistance to the House of Commons: And for those men who had skill in the Laws, it was no great signe of understanding not to perceive that the Laws of the Land were made by the King, to oblige his Subjects to Peace and Justice, and not to oblige himselfe that made them: Lastly, and generally, all men are Fools which pull down any thing which doe them good, before they have set up something better in its place: He that would set up *Democracy* with an Army, should have an Army to maintain it; but these men did it, when the men had the Army that were solv'd to pull it down. To these follies, I might add the follies of those five men, which out of their readings of *Tully*, *Seneca*, and other *Antimonarchicks*, thought themselves sufficient Politicks, and shew their discontents when they are not called to the management of the State, and turn from one side to the other upon every neglect they fancy from the King or his Enemies.

A. **Y**OU have seen the Rump in possession ( as they believ'd ) of the Supreme Power over the two Nations of *England* and *Ireland*, and the Army their Servant, though *Cromwel* thought otherwise, serving them diligently for the advancement of his own purpose; I am now therefore to shew you their Proceedings.

B. Tell me first, how this kind of Government, under the Rump or Relick of a House of Commons, is to be call'd.

A. 'Tis doubtless an *Oligarchy*; for the Supreme Authority must needs be in one man, or in more; if in one, it is *Monarchy*; the Rump therefore was no *Monarchy*; if the Authority were in more than one, it was in all, or in fewer than all: when in all, it is *Democracy*; for every man may enter into the Assembly which makes the Sovereign Court, which they could not do here: It is therefore manifest, the Authority was in a few, and consequently the State was an *Oligarchy*.

B. It is not impossible for a people to be well govern'd, that are to obey more Masters than one.

A. Both the Rump, and all other Sovereign Assemblies, if they have but one Voice, though they be many men, yet are they but one Person; for contrary Commands cannot consist in one and the same Voice, which is the Voice of the greater part: and therefore they might govern well enough, if they had honesty and wit enough.

The first Act of the Rump, was the Exclusion of those Members of the House of Commons which had been formerly kept out by violence, for the procuring of an Ordinance for the Kings Tryal; for these men had appear'd against the Ordinance of Non-Addressees, and therefore to be excluded, because they might else be an impediment to their future designs.

*B.* Was it not rather, because in the Authority of few, they thought the fewer the better, both in regard of their shares, and also of a nearer approach in every one of them to the Dignity of a King?

*A.* Yes certainly, that was their principal end

*B.* When these were put out, why did not the Counties and Burroughs chuse others in their places?

*A.* They could not do that without Order from the House: After this, they constituted a Council of Forty persons, which they termed a Council of State; whose Office was to execute what the Rump should command.

*B.* When there was neither King nor House of Lords, they could not call themselves a Parliament; for a Parliament is a meeting of the King, Lords, and Commons, to confer together about the businesses of the Commonwealth: with whom did the Rump confer?

*A.* Men may give to their Assembly what Name they please, what signification soever such Name might formerly have had; and the Rump took

took the Name of Parliament, as most suitable to their purpose; and such a Name, as being Venerable among the people for many hundred years, had countenanced and sweetened Subsidies, and other Levies of Money, otherwise very unpleasant to the Subject: They took also afterwards another Name, which was, *Custodes Libertatis Anglia*; which Title they used only in their Writs issuing out of the Courts of Justice.

B. I do not see how a Subject that is tyed to the Laws, can have more liberty in one form of Government than another.

A. Howsoever, to the people that understand by Liberty nothing but leave to do what they list, it was a Title not ingrateful.

Their next work was to set forth a publick Declaration, that they were fully resolv'd to maintain the Fundamental Laws of the Nation, as to the preservation of the Lives, Liberties, and Properties of the people.

B. What did they mean by the Fundamental Laws of the Nation?

A. Nothing but to abuse the people; for the only Fundamental Law in every Commonwealth, is to obey the Laws from time to time, which he shall make, to whom the people have given the Supreme Power: How likely then are they to uphold the Fundamental Laws, that had murdered him, who was by themselves so often acknowledged their lawful Sovereign? Besides, at the same time that this Declaration came forth

they were erecting the High Court of Justice, which took away the lives of Duke *Hamilton*, the Earl of *Holland*, and the Lord *Capel*; whatsoever they meant by a Fundamental Law, the erecting of this Court was a breach of it, as being warranted by no former Law, or Example in *England*.

At the same time also they levied Taxes by Soldiers, and permitted Free Quarter to them; and did many other Actions, which if the King had done, they would have said; had been done against the Liberty and Propriety of the Subject.

*B.* What silly things are the common sort of people, to be cozen'd as they were so grossly!

*A.* What sort of People, as to this matter, are not of the common sort? the craftiest Knaves of all the Rump were no wiser than the rest whom they cozen'd; for the most of them did believe, that the same things which they impos'd upon the generality, were just and reasonable; and especially the great Haranguers, and such as pretended to Learning: for who can be a good Subject in a Monarchy, whose Principles are taken from the Enemies of Monarchy? such as were *Cicero*, *Seneca*, *Cato*, and other Politicians of *Rome*, and *Aristotle* of *Athens*, who spake of Kings but as Wolves, and other ravenous Beasts? You may perhaps think a man has need of nothing else, to know the duty he owes to his Governor, and what right he has to order him, but a good natural Wit: But it is otherwise; for

For it is a Science, and built upon sure and clear Principles, and to be learn'd by deep and careful study, or from Masters that have deeply studied it: And who was there in the Parliament, or in the Nation, that could find out those evident Principles, and derive from thence the necessary Rules of Justice, and the necessary Connexion of Justice and Peace? The people have one day in seven the leasure to hear Instructions, and there are Ministers appointed to teach them their duty: But how have these Ministers perform'd their Office? A great part of them, namely, the *Presbyterian* Ministers, throughout the whole War, instigated the people against the King; so did also *Independant*, and other fanatick Ministers: The rest contented with their Livings, Preached in their Parishes points of Controversie, to Religion impertinent, but to the breach of Charity, among themselves, very effectual; or else Eloquent things, which the people either understood not, or thought themselves not concern'd in: But this sort of Preachers, as they did little good, so they did little hurt; the mischief proceeded wholly from the *Presbyterian* Preachers, who by a long practis'd Histrionick Faculty, preached up the Rebellion powerfully.

B. To what end?

A. To the end, that the State becoming popular, the Church might be so too, and govern'd by an Assembly; and consequently (as they thought) seeing Politicks are subservient to

Religion, they might govern, and thereby satisfy their covetous humor with Riches, and also their malice with Power to undo all men that admir'd not their Wisdom. Your calling the people silly things, oblig'd me by this digression to shew you, that it is not want of Wit, but want of the Science of Justice that brought them into those troubles. Perswade, if you can, that man that has made his Fortune, or made it greater, or an Eloquent Orator, or a ravishing Poet, or a subtle Lawyer, or but a good Hunter, or a cunning Gamester, that he has not a good Wit; and yet there were of all these a great many so silly as to be deceived by the Rump. They wanted not wit, but the knowledg of the Causes and grounds upon which one person has a Right to govern, and the rest an Obligation to obey; which grounds are necessary to be taught the people, who without them cannot live long in peace among themselves.

**B.** Let us return, if you please, to the Proceedings of the Rump.

**A.** In the rest of the year, they voted a new Stamp for the Coyn of this Nation: They considered also of Agents to be sent into foreign parts; and having lately receiv'd Applause from the Army for their work done by the High Court of Justice, and encouragement to extend the same farther, they perfected the said High Court of Justice, in which were tryed Duke *Hamilton*, the Earl of *Holland*, the Lord *Capel*, the Earl of *Norwich*, and Sir *John Owen*; whereof (as



(as I mention'd before) the first three were beheaded. This affrighted divers of the Kings Party out of the Land; for not only they, but all that had born Arms for the King, were at that time in very great danger of their lives: for it was put to the question by the Army at a Council of War, Whether they should be all massacred or no; where the *No's* carried it but by two Voices. Lastly, *March 24* they put the Mayor of *London* out of his Office, fined him Two thousand pound, disfranchis'd him, and condemn'd him to two months imprisonment in the *Tower*, for refusing to proclaim the Act for abolishing of the Kingly Power. And thus ended the year 1648. and the Monthly-Fast, God having granted that which they fasted for, the Death of the King, and the possession of his Inheritance. By these their Proceedings, they had already lost the hearts of the generality of the people, and had nothing to trust to but the Army, which was not in their power, but in *Cromwell's*, who never fail'd, when there was occasion, to put them upon all Exploits that might make them odious to the people, in order to his future dissolving them, whensoever it should conduce to his ends. In the beginning of 1649, the *Scots*, discontented with the Proceedings of the Rump against the late King, began to leave Soldiers, in order to a new Invasion of *England*. The *Irish* Rebels, for want of timely resistance from *England*, were grown terrible; and the *English* Army at home, infected by the Adjuta-

tors; began to cast about, how to share the Land among the Godly, meaning themselves, and such others as they pleas'd, who were therefore called *Levellers*: Also the Rump, for the present, were not very well provided of Money; and therefore the first thing they did, was the laying of a Tax upon the people, of Ninety thousand pound a month, for the Maintenance of the Army.

*B.* Was it not one of their Quarrels with the King, that he had levied Money without the consent of the people in Parliament?

*A.* You may see by this what reason the Rump had to call it self a Parliament, for the Taxes imposed by Parliament, were always understood to be by the Peoples consent, and consequently legal.

To appease the *Scots*, they sent Messengers with flattering Letters, to keep them from engaging for the present King; but in vain: for they would hear nothing from a House of Commons (as they call'd it) at *Westminster*, without a King and Lords: But they sent Commissioners to the King, to let him know what they were doing for him, for they were resolv'd to raise an Army of Seventeen thousand Foot, and Six thousand Horse for themselves. To relieve *Ireland*, the Rump had resolv'd to send Eleven Regiments thither out of the Army in *England*. This happened well for *Cromwel*; for the Levelling Soldiers, which were in every Regiment many, and in some the major part, finding that  
instead

instead of dividing the Land at home, they were to venture their lives in *Ireland*, flatly denied to go; and one Regiment having cashier'd their Colonel about *Salisbury*, was marching to joyn with three Regiments more of the same resolution: but both the General, and *Cromwel*, falling upon them at *Burford*, utterly defeated them, and soon after reduced the whole Army to their obedience: And thus another of the Impediments to *Cromwel*'s Advancement was soon remov'd. Thus done, they came to *Oxford*, and thence to *London*; and at *Oxford*, both the General and *Cromwel* were made Doctors of the Civil Law; and at *London* feasted and presented by the City.

*B.* Were they not first made Masters, then Doctors?

*A.* They had made themselves Masters already, both of the Laws, and Parliament. The Army being now obedient, the Rump sent over those eleven Regiments into *Ireland*, under the Command of Doctor *Cromwel*, entituled, Governor of that Kingdom, the Lord *Fairfax* being still General of all the Forces both here and there.

The Marquess, now Duke of *Ormond*, was the Kings Lieutenant of *Ireland*; and the Rebels had made a Confederacy among themselves, and those Confederates had made a kind of League with the Lieutenant, wherein they agreed upon liberty given them in the exercise of their Religion, to be faithful to, and assist the King. To these

these also were joyned some Forces raised by the Earls of *Castlehaven*, and *Clanriccard*, and my Lord *Inchiquin*, so that they were the greatest United Strength in the Island; but there were among them a great many other *Papists* that would by no means subject themselves to *Protestants*, and these were called the *Nuncio's* Party, as the other were called the *Confederate* Party. These Parties not agreeing, and the *Confederate* Party having broken their Articles, the Lord-Lieutenant seeing them ready to besiege him in *Dublin*, and not able to defend it; to preserve the place for the *Protestants*, surrenders it to the Parliament of *England*, and came over to the King, at this time when he was carried from place to place by the Army. From *England* he went over to the Prince, now King, residing then at *Paris*: But the *Confederates* affrighted with the news that the Rump was sending over an Army thither, desir'd the Prince, by Letters, to send back my Lord of *Ormond*, ingaging themselves to submit absolutely to the Kings Authority, and to obey my Lord of *Ormond* as his Lieutenant: And thereupon he was sent back. This was about a year before the going over of *Cromwel*; in which time, by the Dissentions in *Ireland* between the *Confederate* Party, and the *Nuncio's* Party, and discontents about Command, this otherwise-sufficient Power effected nothing, and was at last defeated, *August* the second, by a Salley out of *Dublin*, which they were besieging. Within a few days after arriv'd

arriv'd *Cromwel*; who with extraordinary diligence, and horrid Executions, in less than a Twelvemonth that he staid there, subdued, in a manner, the whole Nation, having kill'd or exterminated a great part of them, and leaving his Son-in-law *Ireton* to subdue the rest: But *Ireton* died there (before the business was quite done) of the Plague. This was one step more towards *Cromwel's* Exaltation to the Throne.

*B.* What a miserable condition was *Ireland* reduced to by the Learning of the *Roman*, as well as *England* was by the Learning of the *Presbyterian* Clergy?

*A.* In the latter end of the proceeding year, the King was come from *Paris* to the *Hague*, and shortly after came thither from the Rump their Agent *Dorilaus*, Doctor of the Civil Law, who had been employed in the drawing of the Charge against the late King: But the first night he came, as he was at Supper, a Company of Cavaliers, near a dozen, entred his Chamber, kill'd him, and got away. Not long after also, their Agent at *Madrid*, one *Ascham*, that had written in defence of his Masters, was kill'd in the same manner. About this time came out two Books; one written by *Salmasius*, a *Presbyterian*, against the Murder of the King; another written by *Milton*, an *Independent* in *England*, in Answer to it.

*B.* I have seen them both; they are very good *Latine* both, and hardly to be judged which is better;

better; and both very ill reasoning, and hardly to be judged which is worst: like two Declamations *Pro* and *Con*, for exercise only in a Rhetorick School, by one and the same man: so like is a *Presbyterian* to an *Independent*.

*A.* In this year the *Rump* did not much at home, save that in the beginning they made *England* a Free State, by an Act which runs thus: *Be it Enacted and declared by this present Parliament, and by the Authority thereof, That the People of England, and all the Dominions and Territories thereunto belonging, are and shall be, and are hereby constituted, made, and declared a Commonwealth, and Free State, &c.*

*B.* What did they mean by a Free State and Commonwealth? were the People no longer to be subject to Laws? They could not mean that: for the Parliament meant to Govern them by their own Laws, and punish such as broke them. Did they mean that *England* should not be subject to any foreign Kingdom or Commonwealth? That needed not to be Enacted, seeing there was no King nor People pretended to be their Masters. What did they mean then?

*A.* They meant that neither this King, nor any King, nor any single person, but only that they themselves would be the Peoples Masters; and would have set it down in those plain words, if the people could have been cozen'd with words intelligible as easily as with words not intelligible.

After this they gave one another Money and Estates

Estates out of the Lands and Goods of the Loyal Party. They Enacted also an Engagement to be taken by every man, in these words, *You shall promise to be true and faithful to the Commonwealth of England, as it is now established, without King or House of Lords.*

They banished also from within twenty miles of *London* all the Loyal Party, forbidding every one of them to depart more than five miles from his dwelling-house.

*B.* They meant perhaps to have them ready, if need were, for a Massacre: But what did the *Scots* in this time?

*A.* They were considering of the Officers of the Army which they were levying for the King, how they might exclude from Command all such as had Loyally served His now Majesties Father, and all *Independents*, and all such as Commanded in Duke *Hamilton's* Army: And these were the main things that passed this year.

The Marquess of *Montross*, that had in the year 1645. with a few Men, and in a little time, done things almost incredible against the late King's Enemies in *Scotland*, landed now again in the beginning of the Year 1650. in the North of *Scotland*, with Commission from the present King, hoping to do him as good service, as he had formerly done his Father; but the case was altered, for the *Scotch* Forces were then in *England*, in the Service of the Parliament; whereas now they were in *Scotland*, and many more (for their intended Invasion) newly rais'd:

raised: Besides, the Soldiers which the Marquis brought over were few, and Forreigners and nor did the *High-landers* come in to him, as he expected; inso much as he was soon defeated, and shortly after taken; and (with more spiteful than savage than revenge requir'd) Executed by the Covenanters at *Edinburgh*, May the 2d.

B. What good could the King expect from joining with these men, who, during the Treason, discovered so much malice to him in one of his best Subjects?

A. No doubt (their Churchmen being the prevalent) they would have done as much to this King, as the *English* Parliament had done to his Father, if they could have gotten by it that which they foolishly aspir'd to, the Government of the Nation: I do not believe that the *Independants* were worse than the *Presbyterians*; but the one and the other were resolved to destroy whatsoever should stand in the way to their Ambition: but necessity made the King pass over both this and many other Indignities from them rather than suffer the pursuit of his Right in *England* to cool, and be little better than extinguished.

B. Indeed, I believe the Kingdom, if suffered to become an old Debt, will hardly ever be recovered: Besides, the King was sure, where ever the Victory lighted, he could loose nothing in the War but Enemies.

A. About the time of *Montrosses* death, which was in May, *Cromwel* was yet in *Ireland*, and his



Mar work unfinished; but finding, or by his Friends  
 igned advertis'd, that his presence in the Expedition  
 as he now preparing against the *Scots*, would be neces-  
 ed, and sary to his Design, sent to the Rump, to know  
 eful in their pleasure, concerning his return: But for  
 by the all that, he knew, or thought it was not necessa-  
 ry to stay for their Answer, but came away, and  
 from arrived at *London* the sixth of *June* following,  
 Treas and was welcomed by the Rump. Now had  
 once General *Fairfax* (who was truly what he pre-  
 tended to be, a *Presbyterian*) been so Catechis'd  
 g the by the *Presbyterian* Ministers here, that he refus'd  
 ch to fight against the Brethren in *Scotland*; nor did  
 one to the Rump, nor *Cromwel* go about to rectifie his  
 t the Conscience in that point. And thus *Fairfax* lay-  
 men ing down his Commission, *Cromwel* was now  
*Inde* made General of all the Forces in *England* and  
 ; bot *Ireland*; which was another step to the Sovereign  
 estro power.

*B.* Where was the King?

*A.* In *Scotland*, newly come over; he landed  
 hem in the *North*, and was honorably conducted to  
 ht in *Edinburgh*, though all things were not yet well  
 extin agreed upon between the *Scots* and him: for he  
 had yielded to as hard Conditions, as the late  
 fere King had yielded to in the Isle of *Wight*; yet  
 be re they had still somewhat to add, till the King en-  
 eve during no more, departed from them towards  
 ng in the *North* again: But they sent Messengers after  
 him, to pray him to return; but they furnished  
 which these Messengers with strength enough to bring  
 d hi him back, if he should have refus'd. In fine,  
 wor they

they agreed, but would not suffer the King, or any Royalist, to have Command in the Army.

*B.* The sum of all is, the King was their Prisoner.

*A.* *Cromwel* from *Berwick* sends a Declaration to the *Scots*, telling them, he had no quarrel against the people of *Scotland*, but against the Malignant Party that had brought in the King to the disturbance of the Peace between the two Nations; and that he was willing by Conference to give and receive satisfaction, or to decide the Justice of the Cause by Battle: To which the *Scots* answering, declare, That they will not prosecute the Kings Interest, before and without his acknowledgment of the sins of his House, and his former ways, and satisfaction given to God's people in both Kingdoms. Judge by this, whether the present King were not in as bad a condition here, as his Father was in the hands of the *Presbyterians* of *England*.

*B.* *Presbyterians* are every where the same: they would fain be absolute Governors of all they converse with; and have nothing to plead for it, but that where they reign, 'tis God that reigns, and no where else. But I observe one strange demand, that the King should acknowledge the sins of his House; for I thought it had been certain from all Divines, that no man was bound to acknowledge any mans sins but his own.

*A.* The King having yielded to all that the Church required, the *Scots* proceeded in their intention.

intended War, *Cromwel* marched on to *Edinbor-*  
*rough*, provoking them all he could to Battle;  
 which they declining, and provisions growing  
 scarce in the *English* Army, *Cromwel* retired to  
*Dunbar*, despairing of success, and intending  
 by Sea or Land to get back into *England*: And  
 such was the condition which this General *Crom-*  
*wel*, so much magnified for Conduct, had brought  
 his Army to, that all his Glories had ended in  
 shame and punishment, if Fortune's, and the  
 faults of his Enemies, had not relieved him: for  
 as he retir'd, the *Scots* followed him close all the  
 way, till within a mile of *Dunbar*. There is a  
 ridge of Hills, that from beyond *Edinburgh*  
 goes winding to the Sea, and crosses the High-  
 way between *Dunbar* and *Barwick*, at a Village  
 called *Copperspeith*, where the passage is so diffi-  
 cult, that if the *Scots* had sent timely thither a  
 very few men to guard it, the *English* could ne-  
 ver have passed: for the *Scots* kept the Hills,  
 and needed not have fought, but upon great ad-  
 vantage, and were almost two to one. *Crom-*  
*wel's* Army was at the Foot of those Hills, on the  
 North side; and there was a great Ditch, or  
 Channel of a Torrent, between the Hills and it;  
 so that he could never have got home by Land,  
 nor without utter ruin of the Army attempted  
 to ship it, nor have stayed where he was for  
 want of Provisions. Now *Cromwel* knowing the  
 Pass was free, and commanding a good Party of  
 Horse and Foot to possess it, it was necessary for  
 the *Scots* to let them go, whom they brag'd they  
 had

had impounded, or else to fight, and therefore with the best of their Horse charged the *English*, and made them at first to shrink a little; but the *English* Foot coming on, the *Scots* were put to flight, and the flight of their Horse hindred the Foot from engaging, who therefore fled, as did also the rest of their Horse. Thus the folly of the *Scottish* Commanders brought all these odds to an even lay between two small and equal Parties, wherein Fortune gave the Victory to the *English*, who were not many more in number than those that were killed and taken Prisoners of the *Scots*, and the Church lost their Cannon, Bag and Baggage, with 1000 Arms, and almost their whole Army; the rest were got together by *Lesby* and *Sterling*.

B. This Victory hapned well for the King; for had the *Scots* been Victors, the *Presbyterian* both there and here would have domineer'd again, and the King been in the same condition his Father was in at *Newcastle*, in the hands of the *Scottish* Army. For in pursuit of this Victory the *English* at last brought the *Scots* to a pretty good habit of obedience for the King, whensoever he should recover his Right.

A. In pursuit of this Victory, the *English* marched to *Edinborough*, quitted by the *Scots* fortified *Leith*, and took in all the strength and Castles they thought fit on this side the *Frith* which was now become the Bounds betwixt the two Nations, and the *Scotch* Ecclesiasticks began to know themselves better, and resolve

in their new Army, which they meant to raise, to admit some of the Royalists into Command: *Cromwel* from *Edinburgh* marched towards *Sterling* to provoke the Enemy to fight; but finding danger in it, returned to *Edinburgh*, and besieged the Castle: in the mean time he sent a Party into the West of *Scotland*, to suppress *Straghan* and *Kerr*, two great *Presbyterians*, that were there levying of Forces for their new Army. And in the same time the *Scots* Crowned the King at *Schone*.

The rest of this year was spent in *Scotland*, on *Cromwel*'s part in taking of *Edinburgh* Castle, and in attempts to pass the *Frith*, or any other ways to get over to the *Scotish* Forces; and on the *Scots* part, in hastning their Levies for the North.

*B.* What did the Rump at home during this time?

*A.* They voted Liberty of Conscience to the Sectaries; that is, they pluckt out the sting of Presbytery, which consisted in a severe imposing of odd Opinions upon the people, impertinent to Religion, but conducing to the advancement of the power of the *Presbyterian* Ministers. Also they levyed more Soldiers, and gave the Command of them to *Harrison*, now made Major-General, a Fifth-Monarchy man; and of those Soldiers, two Regiments of Horse and one of Foot were raised by the Fifth-Monarchy men, and other Sectaries, in thankfulness for this their liberty from the *Presbyterian* Tyranny.

ny. Also they pull'd down the late Kings Statue in the *Exchange*, and in the place where it stood, caused to be written these words, *Exit Tyrannus Regum ultimus*, &c.

B. What good did that do them? and why did not they pull down all the Statues of all the rest of the Kings?

A. What account can be given of a tions that proceed, not from Reason, but spight and such like passions? Besides this, they received Embassadors from *Portugal* and *Spain*, acknowledging their power: And in the very end of the year, they prepared an Embassador to the *Netherlands*, to offer them friendship: All they did besides, was persecuting and executing of Royalists.

In the beginning of the Year 1651. General *Dean* arrived in *Scotland*; and on the 11th. of *April* the *Scotish* Parliament assembled, and made certain Acts, in order to a better uniting of themselves, and better obedience to the King, who was now at *Sterling* with the *Scotish* Forces he had, expecting more now in levying. *Cromwell* from *Edinborough* went divers times to *Sterling*, to provoke them to fight: There was no Ford there to pass over his men: At last, Boat being come from *London* and *Newcastle*, Colonel *Overton* (though it were long first, for it was now *July*.) Transported 1400 Foot of his own besides another Regiment of Foot, and four Troops of Horse, and intrencht himself at *North-Ferry* on the other side; and before any

help could come from *Sterling* Major General *Lambert* also was got over with as many more; by this time Sir *John Brown* was come to oppose them with 4500 men, whom the *English* there defeated, killing about 2000, and taking Prisoners 1600, This done, and as much more of the Army transported as was thought fit, *Cromwell* comes before St. *Johnston's* (from whence the *Scotish* Parliament, upon news of his passing the *Frith*, was removed to *Dundee*) and summons it; and the same day had news brought him, that the King was marching from *Sterling* towards *England*, which was true; but notwithstanding the King was three days march before him, he resolved to have the Town before he followed him, and accordingly had it the next day by surrender.

*B.* What hopes had the King in coming into *England*, having before and behind him none, at least none armed, but his Enemies?

*A.* Yes there was before him the City of *London*, which generally hated the Rump, and might easily be reckoned for 20000 well armed Soldiers; and most men believed they would have taken his part had he come near the City.

*B.* What probability was there of that? Do you think the Rump was not sure of the service of the Mayor, and those that Commanded the City Militia? And if they had been really the Kings friends, what need had they to stay his coming up to *London*? They might have seiz'd the Rump if they had pleas'd, which had no possibility

of defending themselves; at least, they might have turn'd them out of the House.

*A.* This they did not, but on the contrary permitted the recruiting of *Cromwel's* Army, and the raising of men to keep the Country from coming in to the King. The King began his march from *Sterling*, the last of *July*, and *Aug. 25* came to *Worcester*, by the way of *Carlisle*, with a weary Army, of about 13000. whom *Cromwel* followed, and joining with the new Levies, environ'd *Worcester*, with 40000. and on the third of *September* utterly defeated the Kings Army. Here Duke *Hamilton*, brother of him that was beheaded, was slain.

*B.* What became of the King?

*A.* Night coming on before the City was quite taken, he left it, being dark, and not knowing of the Enemies Horse within the Town to follow him; the plundering Foot having kept the Gates shut, lest the Horse should enter, and have a share of the Booty: The King before morning got into *Warwick-shire*, 25 Miles from *Worcester*, and there lay disguised a while, and afterwards went up and down in great danger of being discovered, till at last he got over into *France* from *Bright-hemstead* in *Suffex*.

*B.* When *Cromwel* was gone, what was farther done in *Scotland*?

*A.* Lieutenant Gen. *Monk* whom *Cromwel* left there with 7000 took *Sterling*, *August* the 14th by surrender; and *Dundee* the third of *September* by Storm, because it resisted; this the Soldiers plundered.



plundered and had good booty, because the *Scots* for safety had sent thither their most precious Goods from *Edinburrongh* and *St. Johnston's*; he took likewise by surrender *Aberdeen*, and the place where the Scottish Ministers first learn'd to play the Fools, *St. Andrews*; Also in the *Highlands* Colonel *Alured* took a knot of Lords and Gentlemen, viz. four Earls, and four Lords, and above twenty Knights and Gentlemen, whom he sent Prisoners into *England*, so that there was nothing more to be fear'd from *Scotland*: all the trouble of the *Rump* was to resolve what they should do with it, at last they resolv'd to Unite and incorporate it into a Commonwealth with *England* and *Ireland*, and to that end sent thither *St. Johns, Vane*, and other Commissioners, to offer them this Union by publique Declaration, and to warn them to chuse their Deputies of Shires, Burgeesses of Towns, and send them to *Westminster*.

*B.* This was a great favor.

*A.* I think so; and yet it was by many of the *Scots*, especially by the Ministers and other *Presbyterians* refused: the Ministers had given way to the Levying of Money for the payment of the *English* Soldiers, but to comply with the Declaration of *English* Commissioners they absolutely forbid.

*B.* Methinks this Contributing to the Pay of their Conquerors was some mark of Servitude, where entering into the Union made them Free, and gave them equal Priviledge with the *English*.

A. The cause why they refused the Union, rendered by the *Presbyterians* themselves, was this that it drew with it a subordination of the Church to the Civil State in the things of Christ.

B. This is a down-right Declaration to all Kings and Common-wealths in General, that a *Presbyterian* Minister will be a true Subject to none of them in the things of Christ, which things what they are they will be Judges themselves. What then have we gotten by our Deliverance from the Popes Tyranny, if these prett Men succeed in the place of it, that have nothing in them that can be beneficial to the Publick except their silence; for their Learning, it amounts to no more than an imperfect knowledge of Greek and Latin, and acquired readiness in the Scripture Language, with a Gesture and Tone suitable thereunto: but of Justice and Charity (the Manners of Religion) they have neither Knowledge nor Practice, as is manifest by the Stories I have already told you: nor do they distinguish between the Godly and Ungodly, but by Conformity of Design in Men of Judgment: and by Repetition of their Sermons in the Common sort of People.

A. But this fullness of the *Scots* was to no purpose, for they at *Westminster* Enacted the Union of the two Nations, and the Abolition of Monarchy in *Scotland*, and ordained Punishment for those that should transgress the Act.

B. What other business did the *Ramp* the year?

A. The

A. They sent *St. Johns* and *Strickland* Embassadors to the *Hague*, to offer League to the *United Provinces*, who had Audience *March* the third: *St. Johns* in a Speech shewed those States what advantage they might have by this League; in their Trade and Navigations, by the use of the *English* Ports and Harbors; the *Dutch*, though they shewed no great forwardness in the business, yet appointed Commissioners to Treat with them about it, but the People were generally against it, calling the Embassadors and their Followers (as they were) Traytors and Murderers, and made such Tumults about their House, that their Followers durst not go abroad till the States had quieted them: the *Rump* advertis'd hereof, presently recall'd them; the Complement which *St. Johns* gave to the Commissioners, at their taking leave, is worth your hearing; *You have* (said he) *an Eye upon the Event of the Affairs of Scotland, and therefore do refuse the Friendship we have offered now. I can assure you many in the Parliament were of Opinion that we should not have sent any Embassadors to you, till we had expected your Embassadors to us: I now perceive our Error, and that those Gentlemen were in the right: In a short time you shall see that business ended, when it shall perplex you that you have refus'd our Proffer.*

B. *St. Johns* was not sure that the *Scottish* business would end as it did; for though the *Scots* were beaten at *Dunbar*, he could not be sure of the Event of their entering of *England*, which happened afterward.

*A.* But he guess'd well; for within a Month after the Battle at *Worcester*, an Act passed, forbidding the importing of Merchandize in other than *English* Ships: The *English* also mo'ested their Fishing upon our Coast: They also many times searched their Ships (upon occasion of our War with *France*) and made some of them Prize: and then the *Dutch* sent their Embassadors hither, to desire what they before refus'd: but partly also to inform themselves what Naval Forces the *English* had ready, and how the people were contented with the Government.

*B.* How sped they?

*A.* The Rump shewed now as little desire of Agreement, as the *Dutch* did then, standing upon terms never likely to be granted. First, For the Fishing on the *English* Coast, that they should not have it without paying for it. Secondly, That the *English* should have free Trade from *Middleburgh* to *Antwerp*, as they had before their Rebellion against the King of *Spain*. Thirdly, They demanded amends for the old (but never to be forgotten) business of *Amboyna*; so that the War was already certain, though the Season kept them from Action till the Spring following. The true Quarrel on the *English* part was; that their proffer'd Friendship was scorn'd, and their Embassadors affronted: On the *Dutch* part was their greediness to Ingross all Traffick, and a false Estimate of our and their own Strength. Whilst these things were doing, the Reliques of the War, both in *Ireland* and  
Scotland,

*Scotland*, were not neglected, though these Nations were not fully pacified till two years after: The Persecution of Royalists also still continued, among whom was beheaded one *M. Love*, for holding Correspondence with the King.

*B.* I had thought *Presbyter* and Ministers, whilst they are such, could not be Royalists, because they think their Assembly have the Supreme Power in the things of Christ; and by consequence they are in *England* by a Statute Traitors.

*A.* You may think so still; for though I called *Mr. Love* a Royalist, I meant it only for that one act for which he was condemned. It was he, who, during the Treaty at *Uxbridge*, preaching before the Commissioners there, said, *It was as possible for Heaven and Hell, as for the King and Parliament to agree.* Both he and the rest of the *Presbyterians* are and were Enemies to the Kings Enemies, *Cromwel* and his Fanaticks, for their own, not for the Kings sake: Their Loyalty was like that of *Sir John Hotham*, that kept the King out of *Hull*, and afterwards wou'd have betrayed the same to the Marquess of *Newcastle*. These *Presbyterians* therefore cannot be rightly called Loyal, but rather doubly perfidious; unless you think that as two Negatives make an Affirmative, so two Treasons make Loyalty.

This year also were reduced to the obedience of the Rump, the Islands of *Scilly* and *Man*, and the *Barbado's*, and *St. Christophers*. One thing

fell out that they liked not, which was, that *Cromwel* gave them warning to determine their sitting, according to the Bill for Triennial Parliaments.

*B.* That I think was harsh.

*A.* In the year 1652. *May* 14. began the *Dutch* War in this manner, three *Dutch* Men of War, with divers Merchants from the *Straights*, being discovered by one Captain *Young*, who commanded some *English* Frigats, the said *Young* sent to their Admiral to bid him strike his Flag (a thing usually done in acknowledgment of the *English* Dominion in the Narrow Seas) which accordingly he did. Then came up the Vice-Admiral, and being called so as the other was to take down his Flag, he answered plainly he would not; but after the exchange of four or five Broad-sides, and mischief done on either part, he took it down; but Captain *Young* demanded also either the Vice-Admiral himself, or his Ship, to make satisfaction for the damage already sustained. To which the Vice-Admiral answered, that he had taken in his Flag, but would defend himself and his Ship: whereupon Captain *Young* consulting with the Captains of his other Ships, lest the beginning of the War in this time of Treaty should be charged upon himself, and night also coming on, thought fit to proceed no farther.

*B.* The War certainly began at this time; but who began it?

*A.* The Dominion of the Sea belonging to the

the *English*, there can be no question but the *Dutch* began it; and that the said Dominion belonged to the *English*, it was confest at first by the Admiral himself peaceably, and at last by the Vice-Admiral, taking in their Flags.

About a Fortnight after there happened another Fight, upon the like occasion, upon *Tromp* with 42 Men of War, who came back to the back of *Godwin-Sands* (Major *Bourn* being then with a few of the Parliaments Ships in the *Downs*, and *Blake* with the rest farther Westward) and sent two Captains of his to *Bourn* to excuse his coming thither: To whom *Bourn* returned this answer, that the Message was civil; but that it might appear real, he ought to depart. So *Tromp* departed, meaning (now *Bourn* was satisfied) to sail towards *Blake*, and he did so; but so did also *Bourn*, for fear of the worst. When *Tromp* and *Blake* were near one another, *Blake* made a shot over *Tromp's* Ship, as a warning to him to take in his Flag. This he did thrice, and then *Tromp* gave him a Broad-side, and so began the Fight (at the beginning whereof *Bourn* came in), and lasted from two a Clock till night, the *English* having the better, and the Flag as before making the quarrel.

B. What need is there, when both Nations were heartily resolved to fight, to stand so much upon this Complement of who should begin? For as to the gaining of Friends and Confederates thereby, I think 'tis in vain; seeing

Princes and States, on such occasions, look not much upon the Justice of their Neighbors, but upon their own concernment in the Event.

*A.* It is commonly so : but in this case the *Dutch* knowing the Dominion of the Narrow Seas to be a gallant Title, and envied by all the Nations that reach the Shore, and consequently that they were likely to oppose it, did wisely enough in making this point the state of the Quarrel.

After this Fight, the *Dutch* Embassadors residing in *England*, sent a Paper to the Council of State, wherein they stiled this last Encounter a rash action, and affirmed it was done without the knowledge, and against the will of their Lords, the States General, and desired them that nothing might be done upon it in heat, which might become irreparable. The Parliament hereupon voted, First, That the States General should pay the Charges they were at, and for the Damages they sustained upon this occasion. Secondly, That this being paid, there should be a Cessation of all Acts of Hostility, and a mutual Restitution of all Ships and Goods taken. Thirdly, And both these agreed so, that there should be made a League between the two Common-wealths. These Votes were sent to the *Dutch* Embassadors, in answer of the said Paper; but with a Preamble setting forth the former kindnesses of *England* to the *Netherlands*, and taking notice of their new Fleet of 150 Men of War, without any other appa-



apparent Design than the Destruction of the *Engl<sup>ish</sup>* Fleet.

*B.* What answer made the *Dutch* to this?

*A.* None. *Tromp* sailed presently into *Zealand*, and *Blake* with 70 Men of War to the *Orkney*-Islands, to seize their Busses, and to wait for five *Dutch* Ships from the *East-Indies*; and Sir *George Ascuz*, newly return'd from the *Barbados*, came into the *Dawns* with fifteen Men of War, where he was commanded to stay for a Recruit out of the *Toames*. *Tromp* being recruited to 120 Sail, made account to get in between Sir *George Ascuz*, and the Mouth of the River, but was hindred so long by contrary Winds, that the Merchants calling for his Convoy, he could stay no longer; and so he went back into *Holland*, and thence to *Orkney*, where he met with the said five *East-India* Ships, and sent them home: and then he endeavor'd to ingage with *Blake*; but a sudden Storm forced him to Sea, and so dissipated his Fleet, that only forty-two came home in one Body, the rest singly as well as they could; *Blake* also came home, but went first to the Coast of *Holland*, with 900 Prisoners, and six Men of War taken, which were part of twelve which he found and took Guarding their Busses. This was the first Bout after the War declar'd.

In *August* following there happened a Fight between *De Ruiter*, the Admiral of *Zealand*, with fifty Men of War, and Sir *George Ascuz*, near *Plimouth*, with forty; wherein Sir *George* had the better, and might have got an entire Victory, ha

the whole Fleet engaged. Whatsoever was the matter, the *Rump* (though they rewarded him) never more employed him, after his return, in their service at Sea; but Voted for the year to come three Generals, *Blake* that was one already, and *Dean*, and *Monk*.

About this time Arch-Duke *Leopold* besieging *Dunkirk*, and the *French* sending a Fleet to relieve it, General *Blake* lighting on the *French* at *Calais*, and taking seven of their Ships, was cause of the Towns surrender.

In *September* they fought again, *De Wit* and *Ruyter* commanding the *Dutch*, and *Blake* the *English*; and the *Dutch* were again worsted.

Again, in the end of *November*, *Van Tromp* with 80 Men of War shewed himself at the back of *Godwin-sands*, where *Blake*, though he had with him but 40, adventur'd to fight with him, and had much the worst, and (night parting the *Fray*) retir'd into the River of *Thames*; whilst *Van Tromp* keeping the Sea, took some considerable Vessels from the *English*; and thereupon, (as it is said) with a Childish Vanity, hung out a Broom from his Main Top-Mast, signifying he meant to sweep the Sea of all *English* Shipping.

After this, in *February*, the *Dutch* with *Van Tromp*, were encountred by the *English* under *Blake* and *Dean*, near *Ports-mouth*, and had the worst. And these were all the Encounters between them this year in the narrow Seas: they fought also once at *Legorn*, where the *Dutch* had the better.

*B.* I see no great odds yet on either side, if there were any the *English* had it.

*A.* Nor did either of them e're the more incline to Peace; for the *Hollanders*, after they had sent Embassadors into *Denmark*, *Sweden*, *Poland*, and the *Hans Towns* (whence Tar and Cordage are usually had) to signify the Declaration of the War; and to get them to their Party, recalled their Embassadors from *England*, and the Rump without delay gave them their parting Audience, without abating a Syllable of their former severe Propositions; and presently to maintain the War for the next year, laid a Tax upon the People of 120000 *l. per Men's em.*

*B.* What was done in the mean time at home?

*A.* *Cromwel* was now quarrelling (the last and greatest Obstacle to his Design) the Rump; and to that End there came out daily from the Army Petitions, Addresses, Remonstrances, and other such Papers, some of them urging the Rump to Dissolve themselves, and make way for another Parliament; to which the Rump unwilling to yield, and not daring to refuse, determin'd for the end of their Sitting the Fifth of *November*, 1654. but *Cromwel* meant not to stay so long. In the mean time the Army in *Ireland* was taking Submissions, and granting Transportations of the *Irish*, and Condemned who they pleased in a High Court of Justice Erected there for that purpose. Among those that were Executed, was Hang'd Sir *Phelim Oneale*, who first began the Rebellion in *Scotland*; the *English* Built some Citadels

tadels for the bridling that stubborn Nation :  
And thus ended the year 1652.

*B.* Come we then to the year 1653.

*A.* *Cromwel* wanted now but one step to the end of his Ambition; and that was, to set his Foot upon the Neck of this Long-Parliament, which he did *April* the 23. of this present year, 1653. a time very seasonable, for though the *Dutch* were not Master'd, yet they were much weakened; and what with Prizes from the Enemy, and squeezing the Royal Party, the Treasury was pretty full, and the Tax of 120000 *l.* a Month began to come in, all which was his own in right of the Army: Therefore without any more ado, attended by the Major Generals, *Lambert* and *Harrison*, and some other Officers, and as many Soldiers as he thought fit, he went to the Parliament-House, and Dissolv'd them, turn'd them out, and lock'd up the Doors; and for this Action he was more applauded by the people, than for any of his Victories in the War, and the Parliament-Men as much scorn'd and derided.

*B.* Now that there was no Parliament, who had the Supreme Power?

*A.* If by Power you mean the Right to Govern, no body had it; if you mean the Supreme Strength, it was clearly in *Cromwel*, who was obeyed as General of all the Forces of *England*, *Scotland*, and *Ireland*.

*B.* Did he pretend that for Title?

*A.* No, but presently after he intended a Title, which was this, That he was necessitated for  
the

the Defence of the Cause, for which at first the Parliament had taken up Arms, (that is to say, Rebell'd) to have recourse to extraordinary Actions: You know the pretence of the Long-Parliaments Rebellion was *Salus Populi*, the safety of the Nation against a Dangerous Conspiracy of *Papists*, and a Malignant Party at home; and that every man is bound, as far as his Power extends, to procure the safety of the whole Nation, (which none but the Army were able to do, and the Parliament had hitherto neglected) was it not then the General's Duty to do it? had he not therefore Right? for that Law of *Salus Populi* is directed only to those that have Power enough to Defend the People; that is, to them that have the Supreme Power.

*B.* Yes certainly, he had as good a Title as the Long-Parliament, but the Long-Parliament did Represent the People, and it seems to me that the Sovereign Power is essentially annexed to the Representative of the People.

*A.* Yes, if he that makes a Representative, that is (in the present case) the King, do call them together to receive the Sovereign Power, and he divest himself thereof, otherwise not; nor was ever the Lower House of Parliament the Representative of the whole Nation, but of the Commons only; nor had that House the Power to oblige by their Acts, or Ordinances, any Lord, or any Priest.

*B.* Did *Cromwel* come in upon the only Title of *Salus Populi*? for this is a Title very few understand?

*A.* His

A. His way was to get the Supreme Power conferr'd upon him by Parliament; therefore he call'd a Parliament, and gave it the Supreme Power, to the end that they should give it to him again; was not this witty: First therefore he published a Declaration of the Causes why he dissolv'd the Parliament; the sum whereof was, That instead of endeavoring to promote the good of God's People, they endeavor'd (by a Bill then ready to pass) to recruit the House, and perpetuate their own Power. Next he constituted a Council of State of his own Creatures to be the Supreme Authority of *England*, but no longer than till the next Parliament should be call'd and met: Thirdly he summoned a hundred forty two persons, such as he himself or his trusty Officers made choice of, the greatest part of whom were instructed what to do, obscure persons, most of them *Fanaticks*, though stiled by *Cromwel*, *Men of approved Fidelity and Honesty*: To these the Council of State surrendred the Supreme Authority; and not long after these Men surrendred it to *Cromwel*. *July* the fourth this Parliament met, and chose for their Speaker one Mr. *Rous*, and called themselves from that time forward the Parliament of *England*. But *Cromwel*, for the more surety constituted also a Council of State, not of such petty Fellows as most of these were, but of himself and of his principal Officers. These did all the business both publick and private, making Ordinances, and giving Audience to Foreign Embassadors. But he

he had now more Enemies than before: *Harrison*, who was the Head of the Fifth-Monarchy-Men, laying down his Commission, did nothing but animate his party against him, for which afterward he was Imprisoned. This little Parliament in the mean time were making of Acts so ridiculous and displeasing to the People, that it was thought he chose them on purpose to bring all Ruling Parliaments into contempt, and Monarchy again into Credit.

*B.* What Acts were these?

*A.* One of them was, That all Marriages should be made by a Justice of Peace, and the Banes asked three several days in the next Market. None were forbidden to be married by a Minister, but without a Justice of Peace the Marriage was to be void: so divers wary Couples (to be sure of one another, howsoever they might repent it afterwards) were married both ways: also they Abrogated the Engagement whereby no man was admitted to sue in any Court of Law, that had not taken it, that is, that had not acknowledged the late *Rump*.

*B.* Neither of these did any hurt to *Cromwel*.

*A.* They were also in Hand with an Act to Cancel all the present Laws, and Law-Books, and to make a new Code more suitable to the Humor of the Fifth-Monarchy-Men, of whom there were many in this Parliament; their Tenent being; That there ought none to be Sovereign but King Jesus, nor any to govern under him but the Saints; but their Authority ended before this Act passed.

*B.* What

*B.* What is this to *Cromwel*?

*A.* Nothing yet; but they were likewise upon an Act, now almost ready for the Question; That Parliaments henceforward, one upon the end of another, should be Perpetual.

*B.* I understand not this, unless Parliaments can beget one another like Animals, or like the *Phoenix*.

*A.* Why not like the *Phoenix*? Cannot a Parliament at the day of their Expiration send out Writs for a New one?

*B.* Do you think they would not rather Summon themselves anew, and, to save the labor of coming again to *Westminster*; sit still where they were? or if they Summon the Countries to make new Elections, and then Dissolve themselves, by what Authority shall the People meet in their County-Courts, there being no Supreme Authority standing?

*A.* All they did was absurd: though they knew not that, no nor this, whose Design was upon the Sovereignty; the Contrivers of this Act it seems perceiv'd not, but *Cromwel's* Party in the House saw it well enough: and therefore as soon as it was laid, there stood up one of the Members and made a Motion, that since the Commonwealth was like to receive little benefit by their Sitting, they should Dissolve themselves. *Harrison* and they of his Sect was troubled hereat, and made Speeches against it: but *Cromwel's* Party, of whom the Speaker was one, left the House, and with the Mace before them went to *White-Hall*,  
and



and surrendred their Power to *Cromwel* that had given it them; and so he got the Sovereignty by an Act of Parliament, and within Four days after, (*viz.*) *December 16th.* was Installed Protector, and took his Oath to observe certain Rules of Governing engrossed in Parchment, and read before him, the Writing was called, The Instrument.

*B.* What were the Rules he Sware to?

*A.* One was to call a Parliament every Third year, of which the first was to begin *September* the Third following.

*B.* I believe he was a little Superstitious in the Choice, *September* the Third, because it was lucky in 1650 and 1651 at *Dunbar* and *Worcester*, but he knew not how lucky the same would be to the whole Nation, in 1658 at *White-Hall*.

*A.* Another was; That no Parliament should be Dissolv'd till it had Sitten Five Months, and those Bills that they then presented to him should be passed within twenty days by him, or else they should pass without him.

A Third, That he should have a Council of State of not above Twenty one, nor under Thirteen, and that upon the Protectors Death this Council should Meet, and before they parted chuse a New Protector. There were many more besides, but not necessary to be Inserted.

*B.* How went on the War against the *Dutch*?

*A.* The Generals for the *English* were *Blake*, and *Dear*, and *Monk*; and *Van Tromp* for the *Dutch*; between whom was a Battel Fought the

Second

second of *June* (which was a Month before the beginning of this little Parliament) wherein the *English* had the Victory, and drove the Enemies into their Harbors, but with the loss of General *Dean*, slain by a Cannon-shot. This Victory was great enough to make the *Dutch* send over Embassadors into *England*, in order to a Treaty. But in the mean time they prepared and put to Sea another Fleet, which likewise in the end of *July*, was defeated by General *Monk*; who got now a greater Victory than before; And this made the *Dutch* descend so far, as to buy their Peace with the payment of the Charge of the War, and with the acknowledgment, among other Articles, that the *English* had the right of the Flag. This Peace was concluded in *March*, being the end of this year, but not proclaimed till *April*; the Money it seems being not paid till then.

The *Dutch* War being now ended, the Protector sent his youngest Son, *Henry*; into *Ireland*, whom also some time after he made Lieutenant there; and sent *Monk* Lieutenant General into *Scotland*; to keep those Nations in Obedience. Nothing else worth remembring was done this year at home, saving the discovery of a Plot of Royalists (as was said) upon the life of the Protector, who all this while had Intelligence of the Kings designs from a Traytor in his Court, who afterwards was taken in the manner, and kill'd.

*B.* How came he into so much trust with the King?

*A.* He was the Son of a Colonel that was slain in the Wars on the late King's side: Besides he pretended Employment from the Kings loyal and loving Subjects here, to convey to his Majesty Money, as they from time to time should send him: And to make this credible, *Cromwel* himself caused Money to be sent to him. The following year 1654. had nothing of War; but was spent in Civil Ordinances, in appointing of Judges, preventing of Plots (for Usurpers are jealous) and in executing of the Kings Friends, and selling their Lands. The Third of *September*, according to the Instrument, the Parliament met; in which there was no House of Lords, and the House of Commons was made as formerly of Knights and Burgeses, but not as formerly two Burgeses of a Burrough, and two Knights for a County; for Burroughs for the most part had but one Burgess, and some Counties six or seven Knights; besides there were twenty Members for *Scotland*; and as many for *Ireland*: So that now *Cromwel* had nothing to do, but to shew his Art of Government upon six Coach Horses newly presented him, which being as Rebellious as himself, threw him out of the Coach-Box, and had almost kill'd him.

*B.* This Parliament which had seen how *Cromwel* handled the two former, the long and the short one, had surely learnt the wit to behave them-

themselves better to him than those he'd done.

*A.* Yes, especially now that *Cromwel* in his Speech at their first Meeting, had expressly forbidden them to meddle with the Government of a single Person and Parliament, or with the Militia, or with perpetuating of Parliaments, or taking away Liberty of Conscience. And he told them also, that every Member of the House, before they sate, must take a Recognition of his Power in divers points; whereupon, of above 400 there appeared not above 200 at first; though afterwards some relenting, there sate about 300 again: Just at their Sitting down, he Published some Ordinances of his own, bearing Date before their Meeting, that they might see he took his own Acts to be as valid as theirs. But all this could not make them know themselves, for they proceeded to the debate of every Article of the Recognition.

*B.* They should have debated that before they had taken it.

*A.* But then they had never been suffered to Sit: *Cromwel*, being informed of their stubborn Proceedings, and out of hope of any Supply from them, Dissolv'd them.

All that passed besides in this year, was the Excise of the High-Court of Justice upon some Royalists for Plots.

In the year 1655. the *English*, to the number of near 10000, Landed in *Hispaniola*, in hopes of the Plunder of the Gold and Silver, whereof they thought there was great abundance in the Town

Town of *Santo Domingo*; but were well beaten by a few *Spaniards*, and with the loss of near 1000 Men, went off to *Jamaica*, and possessed it.

This year also the Royal Party made another Attempt in the *West*, and proclaimed there King *Charles* the Second; but few joyning with them, and some falling off, they were soon suppressed, and many of the Principal Persons executed.

*B.* In these many Insurrections, the Royalists, though they meant well, yet they did but disservice to the King by their impatience. What hope had they to prevail against so great an Army as the Protector had ready? What cause was there to despair of seeing the King's business better done by the Dissention and Ambition of the great Commanders in that Army, whereof many had the favor to be esteem'd among them as well as *Cromwel* himself?

*A.* That was somewhat incertain: The Protector being frustrated of his hope of Money at *Santo Domingo*, resolv'd to take from the Royalists the tenth part yearly of their Estates: And to this end chiefly, he divided *England* into Eleven Major-General-Ships, with Commission to every Major-General to make a Roll of the Names of all suspected persons of the King's Party, and to receive the tenth part of their Estates within his Precinct: As also to take caution from them not to act against the State, and to reveal all Plots that should come to their knowledge, and to make them ingage the like for their Servants: They had Commission also to  
for

forbid Horse-race, and concourse of people, and to receive and account for this decimation.

*B.* By this the Usurper might easily inform himself of the value of all the Estates in *England*, and of the Behavior and Affection of every person of quality, which has heretofore been taken for very great Tyranny.

*A.* The year 1656. was a Parliament-year, by the Instrument; between the beginning of this year, and the day of the Parliaments sitting, these Major-Generals resided in several Provinces, behaving themselves most tyrannically.

Amongst other of their Tyrannies was the awing of Elections, and making themselves, and whom they pleas'd, to be return'd Members for the Parliament, which was also thought a part of *Cromwel's* Design in their Constitution; for he had need of a giving Parliament, having lately upon a Peace made with the *French*, drawn upon himself a War with *Spain*.

This year it was that Captain *Strainer* set upon the *Spanish* Plate-fleet, being 8 in number, near *Cadiz*, whereof he sunk two and took two, there being in one of them two millions of pieces of 8, which amounts to 400000*l.* sterling.

This year also it was that *James Naylor*, appear'd at *Bristol*, and would be taken for *Jesus Christ*; he wore his Beard forked, and his Hair compos'd to the likeness of that in the *Folto Santon*; and being questioned, would sometimes answer, *Thou sayst it.* He had also his Disciples that would

would go by his Horse side to the mid-leg in dirt. Being sent for by the Parliament, he was Sentenced to stand on the Pillory, to have his Tongue bored through, and to be marked in the Fore-head with the Letter B for Blasphemy, and to remain in *Bridewel*. *Lambert*, a great Favorite of the Army, endeavor'd to save him, partly because he had been his Soldier, and partly to carry favor with the Sectaries of the Army; for he was now no more in the Protector's Favor, but meditating how he might succeed him in his Power.

About two years before this there appear'd in *Cromwel's* time a Prophetess much fam'd for her Dreams and Visions, and hearkened to by many, whereof some were Eminent Officers, but she and some of her Complices being imprison'd, we heard no more of her.

*B.* I have heard of another, one *Lilly*, that Prophesied all the time of the Long-Parliament, what did they to him?

*A.* His Prophecies were of another kind; he was a Writer of Almanacks, and a pretender to a pretended Art of Judicial Astrologie, a meer Cozener to get Maintenance from a Multitude of ignorant people, and no doubt had been call'd in question, if his Prophecies had been any ways disadvantageous to the Parliament.

*B.* I understand not how the Dreams and Prognostications of mad men (for such I take to be all those that foretel future Contingences) can be of any great disadvantage to the Common-Wealth.

A. Yes; yes: know there is nothing that renders Humane Councils difficult, but the uncertainty of future time, nor that so well directs men in their deliberations, as the fore-sight of the sequels of their Actions; Prophecie being many times the Principal Cause of the Event foretold. If upon some Prediction the people should have been made to believe confidently, that *Oliver Cromwel* and his Army should be upon a day to come utterly defeated, would not every one have endeavor'd to assist, and to deserve well of the Party that should give him the defeat: Upon this account it was that Fortune-tellers and Astrologers were so often banished out of *Rome*.

The last memorable thing of this year was a Motion made by a Member of the House, an Alderman of *London*, that the *Protector* might be petitioned and advised by the House to leave the Title of *Protector*, and take upon him that of *King*.

B. That was indeed a bold Motion, and which would, if prosperous, have put an end to many mens Ambition, and to the licentiousness of the whole Army. I think the Motion was made on purpose to ruin both the *Protector* himself, and his ambitious Officers.

A. It may be so. In the year 1657. the first thing the Parliament did was the drawing up his Petition to the *Protector*, to take upon him the Title of *King*; as of other Parliaments, so of this, the greatest part had been kept out of the House by force, or else themselves had forborn to sit, and became guilty of setting up this

King



King *Oliver*; but those few that fate, presented their Petition to the Protector.

*April* the 9th, in the Banqueting-House at *White-Hall*, where *Sir Thomas Widdrington*, the Speaker, used the first Arguments, and the Protector desired some time to seek God, the Business being weighty: The next day they sent a Committee to him to receive his Answer, which Answer being not very clear, they pressed him again for a Resolution, to which he made Answer in a long Speech that ended in a peremptory Refusal; and so retaining still the Title of Protector, he took upon him the Government, according to certain Articles contained in the said Petition.

*B.* What made him refuse the Title of *King*?

*A.* Because he durst not take it at that time, the Army being addicted to their great Officers, and among their great Officers many hoping to succeed him, and the Succession having been promised to Major General *Lambert*, would have mutinied against him. he was therefore forced to stay for a more Propitious Conjunction.

*B.* What were those Articles?

*A.* The most important of them were; first, That he would exercise the Office of Chief Magistrate of *England*, *Scotland*, and *Ireland*, under the Title of Protector, and govern the same according to the said Petition and Advice; and that he would in his life-time name his Successor.

*B.* I believe the *Scots*, when they first rebell'd, never thought of being Governed absolutely as they were by *Oliver Cromwel*.

## The History of the

*A.* Secondly, That he should call a Parliament every three years at farthest. Thirdly, That those persons which were legally chosen Members should not be secluded without consent of the House. In allowing this Clause, the Protector observed not that the secluded Members of this same Parliament are thereby re-admitted. Fourthly, The Members were qualified. Fifthly, The Power of the other House was defin'd. Sixthly, That no law should be made but by Act of Parliament. Seventhly, That a constant yearly Revenue of a Million of pounds should be setled for the maintenance of the Army and Navy, and 300000 *l.* for the support of the Government; besides other Temporary supplies, as the House of Commons should think fit. Eighthly, That all the Officers of State should be chosen by the Parliament. Ninthly, That the Protector should encourage the Ministry. Lastly, That he should cause a profession of Religion to be agreed on and published. There are divers others of less importance. Having signed the Articles, he was presently with great Ceremonies installed a new.

*B.* What needed that, seeing he was still but Protector?

*A.* But the Articles of this Petition were not all the same with those of his former Instrument for now there was to be another House; and whereas before his Council was to name his Successors, he had power now to do it himself; so that he was an absolute Monarch, and might leave the

Succession

Succession to his Son, if he would; and so successively, or transfer it to whom he pleas'd. The Ceremony being ended, the Parliament adjourned to the 20th of *January* following, and then the other House also sat with their Fellows.

The House of Commons being now full, took little notice of the other House, whetein there were not of 60 persons above nine Lords, but fell a questioning all that there Fellows had done during the time of their Seclusion; whence had followed the avoidance of the Power newly placed in the Protector. Therefore going to the house, he made a Speech to them, ending in these words, *By the living God I must and do dissolve you.*

In this year the *English* gave the *Spaniard* another great Blow at *Santa Cruz*, not much less than that they had given him the year before at *Cadix*.

About the time of the dissolution of this Parliament the Royalists had another Design against the Protector, which was to make an Insurrection in *England*; the King being then in *Flanders* ready to second them from thence with an Army: But this also was discover'd by Treachery, and came to nothing; but the ruin of those that were engaged in it, whereof many in the beginning of the next year were by a High Court of Justice imprison'd, and some executed. This year also was Major General *Lambert* put out of all employment, a Man second to none but *Oliver* in the favor of the Army: but because he expected by that favor, or by promise from the Protector to be his Successor in the Supreme

Power, it would have been dangerous to let him have command in the Army, the Protector having design'd his Successor his Eldest Son *Richard*.

In the year 1658. *September* the third, the Protector died at *Whitehall*, having ever since his last Establishment been perplexed with fear of being kill'd by some desperate attempts of the Royalists.

Being importun'd in his sickness by his Privy Council to name his Successor, he nam'd his Son *Richard*; who encouraged thereunto, not by his own Ambition, but by *Fleetwood*, *Deshorough*, *Thurloe*, and other of his Council, was content to take it upon him; and presently Addresses were made to him from the Armies, in *England*, *Scotland*, and *Ireland*: His first business was, the chargeable and splendid Funeral of his Father.

Thus was *Richard Cromwell* seated in the Imperial Throne of *England*, *Scotland*, and *Ireland*, Successor to his Father; lifted up to it by the Officers of the Army then in Town, and congratulated by all the parts of the Army throughout the three Nations, scarce any Garrison omitting their particular flattering Addresses to him.

*B.* Seeing the Army approv'd of him, how came he so soon cast off?

*A.* The Army was inconstant, he himself irresolute, and without any Military acts of Glory; and though the two principal Officers had a near relation to him, yet neither of them, but *Lambert*, was the great Favorite of the Army, and by courting *Elsermond* to take upon him the Protectorship,

Storship, and by tampering with the Soldiers, had gotten again to be a Colonel; he and the rest of the Officers had a Council at *Wallingford House*, (where *Fleetwood* dwelt) for the dispossessing of *Richard*, though they had not yet considered how the Nations should be govern'd afterwards. For from the beginning of Rebellion the method of Ambition was constantly this, first to destroy, and then to consider what they should set up.

*B.* Could not the Protector, who kept his Court at *White-Hall*, discover what the business of the Officers was at *Wallingford House*, so near him?

*A.* Yes: He was by divers of his Friends inform'd of it, and counsell'd by some of them, who would have done it, to kill the chief of them, but he had not courage enough to give them such a Commission: he took therefore the counsel of some milder persons, which was to call a Parliament, Whereupon Writs were presently sent out to those that were in the last Parliament of the other House, and other Writs to the Sheriffs for the Election of Knights and Burgesses to assemble on the twenty seventh of *January* following. Elections were made according to the antient manner, and a House of Commons now of the right English Temper, and about four hundred in number, including twenty for *Scotland*, as many for *Ireland*; being met, they take themselves, without the Protector and other House, to be a Parliament; and to have the Supreme Power of the three Nations. For the first business they intended the Power of that other

House; but because the Protector had recommended to them for their first Business an Act (already drawn up) for the Recognition of his Protectoral Power, they began with that, and Voted (after a Fortnights' deliberation) that an Act should be made, whereof this Act of Recognition should be part, and that another part should be for the bounding of the Protector's Power, and for the securing of the Priviledges of Parliament and Liberties of the Subject, and that all should pass together.

*B.* Why did these Men own the Protector at first in meeting upon his only Summons? was not that as full a Recognition of his Power as was needful? why, by this Example, did they teach the People that he was to be obeyed, and then by putting Laws upon him teach them that he was not? was it not the Protector that made the Parliament? why did they not acknowledge their Maker?

*A.* I believe it is the desire of most men to bear Rule, but few of them know what Title one has to it more than another, besides the Right of the Sword.

*B.* If they acknowledged the right of the Sword, they were neither just nor wise to oppose the present Government, set up and approved by all the Forces of the three Kingdoms. The Principles of this House of Commons were no doubt the very same with theirs, who began the Rebellion, and would (if they could have raised a sufficient Army) have done the same against the Protector: and the General of their Army would  
in

in like manner have reduced them to a *Rump*; for they that keep an Army and cannot master it, must be subject to it, as much as he that keeps a Lion in his house. The temper of all the Parliaments since the time of Queen *Elizabeth* have been the same with the temper of this Parliament, and shall always be such as long as the *Presbyterians*, and Men of Democratical Principles have the like influence upon Elections.

*A.* After they resolv'd concerning the other House, That during this Parliament they would transact with it, but without intrenching upon the Right of the Peers to have Writs sent to them in all future Parliaments. These Votes being passed they proceed to another, wherein they assume to themselves the power of the Militia; also to shew their Supreme Power, they deliver'd out of Prison some of those that had been (they said) illegally committed by the former Protector. Other points concerning Civil Rights, and concerning Religion, very pleasing to the People were now also under consideration; so that in the end of this year the Protector was no less jealous of the Parliament than of the Council of Officers at *Wallingford house*.

*B.* Thus 'tis when ignorant men will undertake Reformation: There are three Parties, the Protector, the Parliament, And the Army; the Protector against the Parliament and Army, the Parliament against the Army and Protector, and the Army against the Protector and Parliament.

*A.* In the beginning of 1659. the Parliament.

passed divers other Acts, one was to forbid the Meetings in Council of the Army Officers, without Order from the Protector and both Houses. Another that no man shall have any Command or Trust in the Army, who did not first under his Hand engage himself never to interrupt any of the Members, but that they might freely Meet and Debate in the House. And to please the Soldiers, they Voted to take presently into their consideration the means of paying them their Arrears: But whilst they were considering this, the Protector. (according to the first of those Acts) forbade the meeting of Officers at *Wallingford-house*. This made the Government, which by the disagreement of the Protector and Army, was already loose, to fall in pieces. For the Officers, from *Wallingford-house*, with Soldiers enough, came to *White-hall*, and brought with them a Commission ready drawn (giving power to *Desborough* to Dissolve the Parliament) for the Protector to sign; which also, his heart and his party failing him, he signed. The Parliament nevertheless continued sitting; but at the end of the Week, the House adjourned, till the *Monday* after, being *April* the twenty fifth. At their coming on *Monday* morning they found the Door shut up, and the passages to the House fill'd with Soldiers, who plainly told them, *They must sit no longer.* *Richard's* Authority and business in *Town* being thus at an end, he retir'd into the Country, where within a few days (upon promise of the payment of his Debts, which his Fathers Funeral



neral had made great) he signed a Resignation of his Protectorship.

B. To whom?

A. To nobody. But, after ten days cessation of the Sovereignty, some of the *Rumpers* that were in Town, together with the old Speaker Mr. *William Lenthall*, resolv'd among themselves, and with *Lambert*, *Hesterig*, and other Officers, who were also *Rumpers*, in all forty two, to go into the House, which they did, and were by the Army declar'd to be the Parliament. There were also in *Westminster Hall* at that time about their private business some few of those whom the Army had secluded 1648. and were called the secluded Members. These knowing themselves to have been Elected by the same Authority, and having the same right to sit, attempted to get into the House, but were kept out by the Soldiers: The first Vote of the *Rump*, reseated, was *That such persons as heretofore Members of this Parliament have not sitten since the year 1648. shall not sit in this House till farther Order of the Parliament:* And thus the *Rump* recover'd their Authority May the seventh, 1659. which they lost in April 1653.

B. Seeing there have been so many shiftings of the Supreme Authority, I pray you, for memories sake, repeat them briefly in time and order.

A. First from 1640 to 1648. when the King was murthered, the Sovereignty was disputed between King *Charles the First*, and the *Presbyterian* Parliament: Secondly, From 1648 to 1653.

Th

The Power was in that part of the Parliament which voted the Tryal of the King, and declar'd themselves, without King or House of Lords, to have the Supreme Authority of *England* and *Ireland*. For there were in the Long-Parliament two Factions, the *Presbyterian* and *Independents*. The former whereof sought only the subjection of the King, not his destruction directly; the latter sought his destruction: and this part is it which was called the *Rump*. Thirdly, From *April* the twentieth, to *July* the fourth, the Supreme Power was in the hands of a Council of State, constituted by *Cromwel*. Fourthly, From *July* the fourth, to *December* the twelfth of the same year, it was in the Hands of Men called unto it by *Cromwel*, whom he termed men of Fidelity and Integrity, and made them a Parliament, which was called in contempt of one of the Members, *Barebone's* Parliament. Fifthly, From *December* the 12th, 1653. to *September* the third, 1658. it was in the hands of *Oliver Cromwel*, with the Title of Protector. Sixthly, From *September*, 1658. to *April* the twenty fifth, 1659. *Richard Cromwel* had it, as Successor to his Father. Seventhly, From *April* the twenty fifth, 1659. to *May* the seventh of the same year, it was no where. Eighthly, From *May* the seventh, 1659. the *Rump*, which was turn'd out of Door, 1653. recovered it again, and shall lose it again to the Committee of Safety, and again recover it, and again lose it to the right Owner.

B. By whom, and by what Art came the *Rump* to be turn'd out the second time?

A. One

A. One would think them safe enough, the Army in *Scotland*, which when it was in *London*, had helped *Oliver* to pull down the *Rump*; submitted now, beg'd pardon, and promis'd Obedience. The Soldiers in Town had their pay mended, and the Commanders every where took the old Engagement, whereby they had acknowledged their Authority heretofore; they also received their Commissions in the House it self from the Speaker, who was Generalissimo, *Fleetwood* was made Lieutenant-General, with such and so many limitations as were thought necessary by the *Rump*, that remembred how they had been serv'd by their General *Oliver*: Also *Henry Cromwel*, Lord Lieutenant of *Ireland*, having resign'd his Commission by Command, return'd into *England*.

But *Lambert*, to whom (as was said) *Oliver* had promis'd the Succession, and as well as the *Rump* knew the way to the Protectorship by *Oliver*'s own foot-steps, was resolv'd to proceed in it upon the first opportunity, which presented it self presently after.

Besides some Plots of Royalists, whom after the old fashion they again persecuted, there was an Insurrection made against them by *Presbyterians* in *Cheeshire*, Headed by Sir *George Booth*, one of the secluded Members; they were in number about three thousand, and their pretence was for a Free Parliament: There was a great talk of another Rising, or endeavor to rise in *Devonshire* and *Cornwal* at the same time. To suppress Sir  
George

*George Booth*, the *Rump* sent down more than a sufficient Army under *Lambert*, which quickly defeated the *Cheshire* party, and recover'd *Chester*, *Liverpool*, and all the other places they had seized; divers of their Commanders in and after the Battle were taken Prisoners, whereof *Sir George Booth* himself was one.

This Exploit done, *Lambert*, before his return, caressed his Soldiers with an Entertainment, at his own House in *York-shire*, and got their consent to a Petition to be made to the House; that a General might be set up in the Army, as being unfit that the Army should be judged by any Power extrinsick to it self.

*B.* I do not see that unfitness.

*A.* Nor I. But it was (as I have heard) an Action of *Sir Henry Vane's*! But it so much displeased the *Rump*, that they Voted; that the having of more Generals in the Army, than were already settled, was unnecessary, burthensome, and dangerous to the Common-Wealth.

*B.* This was not *Oliver's* Method: for though this *Cheshire* Victory had been as glorious as that of *Oliver* at *Dunbar*; yet it was not the Victory that made *Oliver* General, but the Resignation of *Fairfax*, and the proffer of it to *Cromwel* by the Parliament.

*A.* But *Lambert* thought so well of himself, as to expect it; therefore at his return to *London*, he and other Officers assembling at *Wallingford-house*, drew their Petition into form, and called it a Representation, wherein the Chief point was

was to have a General; with many other of less Importance that were added; and this they represented to the House *Octob.* the 4<sup>th</sup>. by Major General *Desborough*: And this so far forth drew them, as to teach them so much good manners, as to promise to take it presently into Debate, which they did; and *Octob.* the 12<sup>th</sup> having recovered their Spirits, Voted, *That the Commissions of Lambert, Desborough, and others of the Council at Wallingford-House, should be void.* Item, *That the Army should be Governed by a Commission to Fleet-wood, Monk, Hesslerig, Walton, Morley, and Overton, till February the twelfth following;* And to make this good against the Force they expected from *Lambert*, they ordered *Hesslerig* and *Morley* to issue Warrants to such Officers as they could trust to bring their Soldiers next morning into *Westminster*, which was done somewhat too late, for *Lambert* had first brought his Soldiers thither, and beset the House, and turn'd back the Speaker which was then coming to it; but *Hesslerig's* Forces, marching about *St. James's Park Wall*, came into *St. Margarets Church-Yard*, and so both Parties looked all day one upon another like Enemies, but offered not to fight; whereby the Rump was put out of possession of the House, and the Officers continued their Meeting, as before, at *Wallingford-House*; there they chose from among themselves, with some few of the City, a Committee, which they called, *The Committee of Safety*, whereof the chief were  
*Lambert*

*Lambert* and *Vane*, who, with the advice of a General Council of Officers, had Power to call Delinquents to Tryal; to suppress *Rebellions*; to treat with *Foreign States*, &c. You see now the *Rump* cut off, and the *Supreme Power*, ( which is charged with *Salus Populi* ) transferred to a Council of Officers, and yet *Lambert* hopes for it in the end: But one of their Limitations was, *That they should within six Weeks present to the Army a new Model of the Government*; if they had done so, do you think they would have prefer'd *Lambert*, or any other, to the *Supreme Authority* rather than themselves?

B. I think not: when the *Rump* had put into Commission ( among a few others ) for the Government of the Army, that is, for the Government of the *three Nations*, General *Monk*, already Commander in Chief of the Army in *Scotland*, and that had done much greater things in this War than *Lambert*, how durst they leave him out of this *Committee of Safety*? or how could *Lambert* think that Gen. *Monk* would forgive it, and not endeavor to fasten the *Rump* again?

A. They thought not of him, his Gallantry had been shown on remote *Stages*, *Ireland* and *Scotland*; his Ambition had not appeared here in their Contentions for the Government, but he had complied both with *Richard* and the *Rump*. After General *Monk* had signified by Letter his dislike of the Proceedings of *Lambert* and his *Fellows*, they were much surpriz'd, and began to think him more considerable than they had done, but it was too late.

B. Why,

B. Why, was his Army not too small for so great an Enterprize?

A. The General knew very well his own and their Forces, both what they were then, and how they were to be *augmented*, and what generally *City* and *Country* wished for, which was the *restitution* of the King; which to bring about, there needed no more but to come with his Army (though not very great) to *London*, to the doing whereof there was no obstacle but the Army with *Lambert*. What could he do in this Case? If he had declar'd presently for the King, or a free Parliament, all the Armies in *England* would have joyned against him, and, assuming the Title of a Parliament, would have furnished themselves with Money. General *Monk*, after he had thus quarrelled by his Letter with the Council of Officers, he secur'd first those Officers of his own Army which were *Anabaptists*, and therefore not to be trusted, and put others into their places; then drawing his Forces together, march'd to *Berwick*. Being there he indicted a Convention of the *Scots*, of whom he desired *That they would take order for the security of the Nation in his absence, and raise some Maintenance for his Army in their March*. The Convention promised, for the Security of the Nation, their best Endeavor, and rais'd him a sum of Money, not great, but enough for his purpose, excusing themselves upon their present Wants. On the other side, the Committee of safety, with the greatest and best  
part

part of their Army, sent *Lambert* to oppose him; but at the same time, by divers Messages and Mediators, urged him to a Treaty, which he consented to, and sent three Officers to *London* to treat with as many of *Theirs*. These six suddenly concluded, without Power from the General, upon these Articles; *That the King be excluded, a Free State settled, the Ministry and Universities encouraged*, with divers which the General liked not, and imprison'd one of his Commissioners for exceeding his Commission; whereupon another Treaty was agreed on, of five to five; but whilst these Treaties were in Hand, *Heslerig*, a Member of the Rump, seized on *Portsmouth*; and the Soldiers sent by the Committee of Safety to reduce it, instead of that entered into the Town, and joyned with *Heslerig*. Secondly, The City renewed their Tumults for a Free Parliament. Thirdly, The Lord *Fairfax* a Member also of the Rump, and greatly favor'd in *York-shire*, was raising Forces there behind *Lambert*; who being now between two Armies, his Enemies, would gladly have fought the General. Fourthly, there came news that *Devonshire* and *Cornwal* were lifting of Soldiers. Lastly, *Lambert's* Army wanting Money, and sure they should not be furnished from the Council of Officers, which had neither Authority nor Strength to levy Money, grew discontented, and for their Free-Quarter were odious to the Northern Countries.

B. I wonder why the Scots were so ready to fur-



furnish General *Monk* with Money, for they were no Friends to the Rump.

A. I know not; but I believe the *Scots* would have parted with a greater sum, rather than the *English* should not have gone together by the Ears among themselves. The Council of Officers being now beset with so many Enemies, produced speedily their Model of Government, wch was to have a free Parliament, which should meet *Decemb.* the fifteenth, but with such Qualifications of no King, no House of Lords, as made the City more angry than before. To send Soldiers into the *West*, to suppress those that were rising there, they durst not, for fear of the City; nor could they raise any other, for want of Money: there remain'd nothing but to break, and quitting *Wallingford-House*, to shift for themselves. This coming to the knowledg of their Army in the *North*, they deserted *Lambert*; and the Rumpers the 26. of *Decem.* re-possest the House.

B. Seeing the Rump was now resealed, the business pretended by General *Monk* for his marching to *London* was at an end.

A. The Rump, though seated, was not well settled; but (in the midst of so many Tumults for a free Parliament) had as much need of the General's coming up now, as before: He therefore sent them word, that because he thought them not yet secure enough, he would come up to *London* with his Army; which they not only accepted of, but entreated him so to do, and voted him for his service 1000*l.* a year.

The General marching towards *London*, the  
Country

Country every where Petition'd him for a free Parliament. The Rump to make room in *London* for his Army, dislodged their own; the General, for all that, had not let fall a word in all this time, that could be taken for a Declaration of his Final Design.

*B.* How did the Rump revenge themselves on *Lambert*?

*A.* They never troubled him: nor do I know any cause of their so gentle dealing with him; but certainly *Lambert* was the ablest of any Officer they had to do them service, when they should have means & need to imploy him. After the General was come to *London*, the Rump sent to the City for their part of a Tax of 100000 *l.* a Month for six Months, according to an Act which the Rump had made formerly before their Disseisin by the Committee of Safety: But the City, who were averse to the Rump, and keen upon a free Parliament, could not be brought to give their Money to their Enemies, and to purposes repugnant to their own; whereupon the Rump sent Order to the General to break down the City Gates and their Portcullices, and to imprison certain obstinate Citizens: This he perform'd, and it was the last service he did them.

About this time the Commission by which General *Monk* with others had the Government of the Army put into their hands by the Rump, before the Usurpation of the Council of Officers, came to expire, which the present Rump renewed.

*B.* He was thereby the sixth part of the General  
of

of the whole Forces of the Common-wealth; if I had been as the Rump, he should have been sole Gen. In such cases as this, there cannot be a greater Vice than pinching: Ambition should be liberal.

*A.* After the pulling down of the City Gates, the General sent a Letter to the Rump, to let them know that this service was much against his Nature; and to put them in mind, how well the City had serv'd the Parliament in the whole War.

*B.* Yes; but for the City the Parliament could never have made the War, nor the Rump ever have murdered the King.

*A.* The Rump considered not the Merit of the City, nor the good nature of the General, they were busie, they were giving out Commissions, making of Acts for Abjuration of the King and his Line, and for the Old Engagement; & conferring with the City to get Mony. The General also desir'd to hear Conference between some of the Rump, and some of the Secluded Members, concerning the Justice of their Seclusion, and of the hurt that could follow upon their re-admission, & it was granted. After long Conference, the General finding the Rumps pretences unreasonable & ambitious, declar'd himself with the City for a free Parliament, and came to *Westminster* with the Secluded Members, (whom he had appointed to meet and stay for him at *White Hall*) and replaced them in the House among the Rumpers; so that now the same Cattel that were in the House of Commons in 1640. (except those that were dead, & those that went from them to the late King at *Oxford*) are all there again.

## The History of the

*B.* But this methinks was no good service to the King, unless they had learnt better Principles.

*A.* They had learnt nothing; the major part was now again *Presbyterians*. 'Tis true, they were so grateful to General *Munk*, as to make him General of all the Forces in the three Nations: They did well also to make void the Engagement; but it was because those Acts were made to the prejudice of their Party, but recalled none of their own *Rebellious Ordinances*, nor did any thing in order to the good of the present King; but on the contrary, they declar'd by a Vote, that the late King began the War against his two Houses.

*B.* The two Houses, considered as two Persons, were they not two of the Kings Subjects? If a K. raise an Army against his Subjects, is it lawful for the Subject to resist with force, when (as in this case) he might have had Peace upon his submission.

*A.* They knew they had acted vilely & sottishly; but because they had always so greater than ordinary wisdom and godliness, they were loth to confess it: The *Presbyterians* now saw their time to make a Confession of their Faith, and presented it to the House of Commons, to shew they had not changed their Principles, which (after six Readings in the House) was voted to be printed, and once a year to be read publick in every Church.

*B.* I say again, this re-establishing of the Long Parliament was no good service to the King.

*A.* Have a little patience, they were re-established with two Conditions; one to determine their sitting before the end of *March*, another to send

out Writs before their rising for new Elections.

B. That qualifies.

A. That brought in the King; for few of the Long-Parliament ( the Country having felt the smart of their former service ) could get themselves chosen again. This new Parliament began to sit *April* the 23. 1660. How soon these called in the King, with what Joy and Triumph he was receiv'd, how earnestly his Majesty pressed the Parliament for the Act of Oblivion, and how few were excepted out of it, you know as well as I.

B. But I have not yet observ'd in the *Presbyterians* any Oblivion of their former principles, we are but return'd to the state we were in at the beginning of the Sedition.

A. Not so; for before that time, though the Kings of *England* had the right of the Militia in vertue of the Sovereignty, and without dispute, and without any particular Act of Parliament directly to the purpose; yet now after this bloody dispute, the next, which is the present Parliament, in proper & express terms hath declar'd the same to be the Right of the King only, without either of his Houses of Parliament; which is more instructive to the people, than any Arguments drawn from the Title of Sovereignty, and consequently fitter to disarm the Ambition of all seditious Haranguers for the time to come.

B-Pray God it be so; howsoever I must confess, that this Parliament has done all that a Parliament can do for the security of our peace; which I think also would be enough, if our Preachers would

would take heed of instilling evil Principles into their Auditory. I have seen in this Revolution a circular motion of the Sovereign Power, through two Usurpers, from the late King, to this his Son; for (leaving out the power of the Council of Officers, which was but temporary, and no otherwise owned by them, but in trust) it moved from King *Charles* the First to the Long Parliament, from thence to the Rump, from the Rump to *Oliver Cromwell*, and then back again from *Richard Cromwell* to the Rump, thence to the Long Parliament, and thence to King *Charles* the Second, where long may it remain.

*A. Amen*: And may he have, as often as there shall be need, such a General.

*B.* You have told me little of the General, till now in the end: but truly, I think, the bringing of his little Army entirely out of *Scotland* up to *London*, was the greatest Stratagem that is extant in History.

F I N I S.